



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

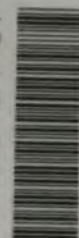
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

98 69 011



UC-NRLF

# NEW GUINEA



L. M. D'ALBERTIS

REESE LIBRARY  
OF THE  
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA.

Received

June 1 1882

Accessions No.

20132

Shelf No.







Houses . . .





L. M. D'ALBERTIS.

[Frontispiece.]

# THEORY OF THE

THEORY OF THE

.

.

THEORY OF THE

.

THEORY OF THE

THEORY OF THE

THEORY OF THE

THEORY OF THE

.



# NEW GUINEA:

WHAT I DID AND WHAT I SAW.

By L. M. D'ALBERTIS,  
"

OFFICER OF THE ORDER OF THE CROWN OF ITALY; HONORARY MEMBER  
AND GOLD MEDALIST OF THE I.R.G.S., C.M.Z.S., ETC., ETC.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.



SAMPSON LOW, MARSTON, SEARLE, & RIVINGTON,  
CROWN BUILDINGS, 188, FLEET STREET.

1880.

[*All rights reserved.*]



11/14:  
A2  
v.1

LONDON:  
GILBERT AND RIVINGTON, PRINTERS,  
ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.  
1832

# CONTENTS.

## MY VOYAGE OF 1871-72-73.

### CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
We embark at Genoa—Imagination and reality—Glimpses of the East—Notes by the way—Galle, Singapore, Java, the Flores Straits—Amboyna—Wahai—Our difficulties begin—The “Burong Laut”—Ghesser—A calm—Goram—Pigeons and Bats—Natives—A stampede—New Guinea at last! . . . . .	1

### CHAPTER II.

Our first day on shore in New Guinea—A primeval forest <del>in reality as contrasted with a primeval forest in imagination</del> —Kangaroos—Spiders’ webs—Birds—Faor Island—A huge lizard— <i>Cuscus Maculatus</i> —Casuarina-trees—Kapaor—Boughis traders—Various types among the natives—In search of massoi—We ascend the mountain, and find a delusion at the top—Rajas—Farewell to Kapaor . . . . .	19
--	----

### CHAPTER III.

(X) Salwattee—We are received by the Orangtua—Sorong— <del>Bernstein’s house</del> —An Englishman’s grave—We take possession of our house and cultivate the natives, but with little result—My shooting expeditions—Fever—A boar hunt . . . . .	39
---	----

## CHAPTER IV.

	PAGE
The River Ramoi—The Alfuros—Short commons—Forest walks—A suspicious circumstance—The natives object to our presence, and charge us with causing the death of their children—A painful scene—Return to Sorong	47

## CHAPTER V.

The Papuans of Dorey—The Raja of Salwattee—Sennagi Braus—A comfortless voyage—Black cockatoos—I become dropsical—I land and see a family of Alfuros—On the 24th July I kill my first bird of paradise—I am suddenly cured of dropsy—An adventure with a hornbill—Trouble by sea—Mansinam—The missionary there, his success, and his prospects—Andai—We take up our abode there—Mr. Van Hasselt's visit—A groundless accusation against us—The forest—My Papuan guide—I catechize him, with odd results . . . . .	59
--	----

## CHAPTER VI.

Our expedition to Hatam is arranged—Four out of six bearers present themselves—Substitutes—We leave Andai—The Forest again—Birds of paradise—A suddenly invaded solitude—A friendly tribe, and hospitable treatment—Putat—A little science, which goes a very long way—Once more on the march—Putat Mountain—A splendid panorama—Short commons—A view of the Arfak Mountains—The path—Mountain scenery—Tree-ferns and rhododendron—Shrubs—Hatam—The Corano—A great day for me—Remorse and exultation—Albinos—A theory—I settle down for a while . . . . .	82
---	----

## CHAPTER VII.

Rules of the chase among head-hunters—A superb bird—A false alarm—A native plot—Its failure—A plot of my own—Its success—A black day—I leave Hatam.	114
---	-----

## *Contents.*

v

### CHAPTER VIII.

	PAGE
A signal—A halt—Camp fires—Bats, small and large— A night scene—A cruel deception—Footprints in the sand—Letters from Beccari—Andai—Severe illness, and good nursing—A resolution reluctantly formed— Sorong—We embark—A double anniversary—A birthday feast—A bonfire of a boat . . . . .	127

### CHAPTER IX.

The "Dasson"—A beautiful prospect—Poetical ideas and short commons—Sufferings from heat and hunger— Mesac's illness and death—A contrary wind—The "Vittor Pisani"—Count Lovera—A kind reception —The Dutch in New Guinea—We land at Dulan— The forest—The road—The raja—Arru Island— Dobbo, its features and importance—A happy man .	151
---	-----

### CHAPTER X.

Battulei—A coral reef—Birds—Fruit-trees—Skulls— Treatment of the dead—Chinamen—Trade—Native customs—A mountain range—Ciaccia's home-sick- ness—The island of Ropo-ropo—Effect of music— Port Vittor Pisani—Native dress and ornaments .	172
---	-----

### CHAPTER XI.

Missing a bargain—Cleanliness and order of the native houses—Cultivation—Arms—Native carving—A remarkable club—Birds of paradise—A new species —An early start—A deadly weapon—Our last ad- venture at Orangerie Bay—A probable tradition— Poor Ciaccia—Peculiarities of the Natives—Their houses—I make friends with the women—Domestic animals—In sight of Cape Danger—Port Jackson— Double Bay . . . . .	189
---	-----

SUMMARY OF OBSERVATIONS MADE DURING MY VOYAGE OF 1872-73 . . . . .	206
---	-----

## A VOYAGE TO YULE ISLAND IN 1875.

---

### CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
I resolve to return to Andai—I change my purpose—My reasons—I decide on exploring Yule Island—Somerset—What the Naturalist may do there—Insects—I become a nocturnal animal—Ants—Birds—The human inhabitants—Their manners and customs—Captain Redlich—Tawan—Rocky Hills—Darnley Island—A beautiful landscape—The natives . . .	223

### CHAPTER II.

A Storm, followed by a pleasant surprise—I land on Yule Island—"The Queen"—Friendly Natives—We come to terms—Naimi—I select the site of my house, and it is marked out—I take possession and make payment—The Natives make acquaintance with my gun—Tent-pitching <i>en attendant</i> —Midnight visits—A regular invasion—Pleasant weather, and friendly relations—House-warming—The "Ellangowan" again.	243
--	-----

### CHAPTER III.

I cross the bay—The Eucalyptus—Birds and insects—A new species of Gowra—Aicci—I show the Natives a looking-glass—A visit—Friendly strangers—The influence of women—A Papuan house—Mourners—I win golden opinions by showing respect for the dead—A snake—Rope-making—Some splendid visitors—Nature's gentlemen—A great haul of insects—Ocona—Nicura—An expedition is arranged. . . .	267
--	-----

### CHAPTER IV.

The women join our party, and make difficulties for me—A village interior—A tame snake—Pretended sorcery, and real fight—Aira—A painful operation—Curious belts worn by the Natives—Successful quest in the forest—Domestic animals—A fresh start—A sleepless night—A beautiful scene—Perfumed air . . .	291
--	-----

CHAPTER V.

	PAGE
I officiate as both doctor and nurse—A native funeral —We ascend the river—Nipa—A huge snake—A handsome native woman—The Mareas—My umbrella —Friendly farewells—Mou—Cleanliness of the vil- lage—Naimi—A new species of bird—Sick and lazy people—The missionary steamer—We arrange with Mr. MacFarlane—A bitter disappointment—The value of "home" letters to a traveller . . .	308

CHAPTER VI.

Our monotonous life again—A visit from people from the far interior of New Guinea—No more dread of hunger—It never rains but it pours—Naimi's canoe —Barter with Pakao—A huge Liasis—Their para- sites—I figure as a rain-maker—A new-born infant— Mateiu and the canoe—I win the Natives—Felling trees by dynamite—Pilfering of the Natives—Depar- ture for Bioto and Naiabui—A strange combat at Night—Naiabui—I establish a friendship with the Natives—"Music hath charms"—I return to Yule Island, find my house has been robbed, and take measures to enforce restitution . . .	329
--	-----

CHAPTER VII.

I go through sundry performances for the admonition and edification of the Natives—Return of my men from Naiabui—Insect-collecting—Naimi and Oona —A great flight of <i>Pteropus</i> —A torment of the Inferno which Dante omitted—Confidence of the Natives—They go on a kangaroo-hunting expedition, and leave me in charge of the village and the women —"When the cat is away the mice may play"— The "Chevert"— <i>Carpophaga Müllerii</i> —Important additions to my collections—A gala day at Bioto . . .	351
---	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

At Bioto again—My health becomes unsatisfactory—My tame snakes—My dog dies—I become very despondent	
--	--



	PAGE
—Abia—A touch of romance—Oona arrives—A hurricane and its results—A reconciliation with Naimi—The death of Mr. Applin—Arrival of the Missionary steamer—A fine snake—I announce my intended departure—Grief of the Naiabui people—Wives—A clever spider—“Tater”—Travellers’ tales—A sad parting—Friendliness of the queen . . . . .	373
NOTES ON NAIABUI . . . . .	390
SUMMARY OF OBSERVATIONS AT YULE ISLAND AND HALL SOUND . . . . .	400
CATALOGUE OF BIRDS COLLECTED IN THE YEAR 1872 . . . . .	422

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS TO VOL. I.

	PAGE
Portrait of the Author . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Carved bamboo for lime . . . . .	17
Bamboo comb . . . . .	28
Hunting arrows of bamboo, and spear of cassowary bone	50
Native pillow, carved wood . . . . .	52
- Fanduri, a Dorey Papuan . . . . .	59
- Karwari, or god, and amulet . . . . .	60
Implement used to wash sago . . . . .	81
- Lophorina atra . . . . .	82
- Ucoot (Arfak), Amar (Mansinam), and Koronoi (Dorey), men of the Author's escort . . . . .	92
- Parotia sexpennis . . . . .	104
Drepanornis Albertisii . . . . .	114
- Phalangista Bernsteinii . . . . .	124
- Phalangista pennata . . . . .	125
Wooden spoons and pipes, used and made by the Arfaks	132
- Portrait of Quampau . . . . .	140
- Andai people . . . . .	141
Portrait of Oubingai . . . . .	151
Club of carved wood . . . . .	191
Weapon of stone and wood . . . . .	194
Hornbills' beaks, used as a headdress . . . . .	199
Headdresses and ornaments, Fly River, Orangerie Bay, Moatta, and Hall Sound; Gourd for lime, Fly River and Hall Sound . . . . .	222
- Paradisea Raggiana . . . . .	223
Mount Yule Range, seen from Yule Island . . . . .	223
Mecynognathus Damelii . . . . .	227
Women of Moatta coming from the bush . . . . .	231
A Darnley Island man . . . . .	238

	PAGE
- Darnley Island mummy . . . . .	240
Skull, Darnley Island, Torres Strait . . . . .	241
Mount Owen Stanley . . . . .	247
Various ornaments, Moatta, Fly River, and Hall Sound .	263
Stone axes, Hall Sound ; grinding-stone, Fly River ; shell spades, Moatta . . . . .	266
- Goura Albertisii . . . . .	269
- Harpyopsis Novæ Guineæ ( <i>Salvadori</i> ) . . . . .	278
Epa . . . . .	290
- Dorcopsis luctuosus . . . . .	295
Paddles and spears, Fly River, Yule Island, and Hall Sound . . . . .	297
Musical instruments, ornaments, &c.—Kataw, Moatta, Fly River, Hall Sound, and Yule Island . . . . .	305
Eupholus Bennettii . . . . .	334
Various implements, &c., Fly River and Hall Sound . .	416



# NEW GUINEA.

## MY VOYAGE OF 1871-72-73.

### CHAPTER I.

We embark at Genoa—Imagination and reality—Glimpses of the East—Notes by the way—Galle, Singapore, Java, the Flores Straits—Amboyna—Wahai—Our difficulties begin—The "Burong Laut"—Ghesser—A calm—Goram—Pigeons and Bats—Natives—A stampede—New Guinea at last!

At 9 p.m. on the 25th of November, 1871, the steamer "Arabia," bound for Bombay, sailed from Genoa. Among the passengers were Doctor Beccari, the well-known traveller and botanist, and myself. Some friends had accompanied us on board in order to see the last of us, and wish us a pleasant journey and success in our undertaking. This was no less than the exploration of the savage, distant, and unknown country of Papua. This word had an unknown sound in my ears. The idea of journeying to a land of ever verdant primeval forests, a region of perpetual ecstasy—where I should find man the unspoiled son of nature, the free savage in his primitive state,—had taken such possession of

my mind, and so fired my imagination, that even the few minutes requisite for the steamer to leave the harbour seemed an eternity. Before arriving at New Guinea we were to visit certain Eastern lands, where the modes and customs of life are as different from ours as the physical appearance of the various races. This prospect also set my fancy stirring, and I could dream only of the fiery horses of Arabia, of the camels of the desert, of temples and pagodas, sultans and odalisques. I beheld in my mind's eye cloudless skies, golden horizons, and glorious sunsets; while in the far distance, and at the extreme point of the vast prospect loomed Papua, the land of primeval forests, of primitive man—the land of the bird of paradise.

The night of the 25th of November was dark, and at a distance of but three or four miles from the harbour all we could see of Genoa was a crowd of little lights, which looked like glow-worms in the clouds. A few miles farther, and only the revolving lantern of the lighthouse pointed out to us the place where we had spoken our last words of affection to a few dear friends.

From Genoa we made Naples—from Naples, Messina. Before leaving the latter port we heard that the King, Victor Emanuel, had opened the first Parliament at Rome, and had uttered the celebrated words, "At Rome we are; at Rome we will remain." In the state of mind in which I then was those words awoke great enthusiasm in me. We Italians had now a country, we had won a capital, which in former times was the capital of the world. At last we had a country for which

it was our duty to labour. In my ears the words of the *Re Galantuomo* sounded like a command; did they not say to all Italians, "We are at Rome; let us be worthy of Rome?"

In taking our leave of Messina we said farewell to Italy.

We arrived at last at Port Saïd, visited the tanks of Aden, and climbed its bare, black heights. I saw camels and horses, not Arabian, though belonging to the Arab. I saw the Arab himself, squalid and ragged; women who looked like phantoms; misery and vice under the same roof; and men and animals living together like brothers—and I asked myself, "Is this the East?" I saw the devout Arab prostrate himself to salute the rising sun; but he prostrated himself in dirt,—and I asked myself, "Is it not possible that he should be religious and cleanly at the same time? Of what use can religion be to the Arab if it do not take him out of the filth, moral and physical, in which he lives?" In Bombay my former enthusiasm on the subject of the East was partially rekindled. I saw the Towers of Silence, with the flocks of vultures circling in the air and watching for their daily food. My fancy showed me the bones, the heads, and the flesh of the Parsees, rent by those powerful claws and beaks; and I pictured to myself the horrible spectacle of blood-stained limbs, until it seemed to me that I could actually behold the vultures picking from the orbits of a skull a pair of eyes, which had grown dim in study of the books of a religion which condemned them to become the prey of a foul bird.



I saw palms and ferns, and beautiful gardens, amid whose cool shades stood romantic bungalows, and I saw a land of flowers that too often concealed misery and vice. Alas! these are part and portion of humanity!

We visited the island of Elephanta, and its ancient temples, majestic witnesses, in ruin, to the life of a former age.

At Point de Galle we explored the palm groves, the plains, and the marshes; and for the first time I beheld monkeys in a free and independent state, living at the cost of man, who tills the soil while they plunder its fruits. We saw the laborious and industrious inhabitants; but among them, also, vice and misery stalked in close companionship.

At Singapore I saw two races of man hitherto unknown to me, the Malay and the Chinese; and after I had visited their city by day and by night, and been present at a Chinese play, I again asked myself, "Can this be the East?"

From Singapore we went to Java, from Batavia to Beutenzorg, from Beutenzorg to Sinanlaya and Pangarango, an extinct volcano. Here I began to comprehend the meaning of primeval forests; here I first felt the strange impression they produce. I was struck with astonishment at the agility of hundreds of apes, who fled screaming at our approach. I admired the industry of the Javanese, who are at once both free and enslaved, but contented slaves, and tillers of the soil. I did not, however, linger in contemplation of the remains of their ancient religion and civilization, or in wonder at the temples

excavated in the deserted roads, and I hardly allowed myself a few brief reflections on the fate of nations. From Java we went to Macassar; and in passing Timor Dely and Timor Coupang, by the Flores Straits, we had a view of one of the most picturesque landscapes I have ever seen.

From Timor we made Banda, a volcanic island where the nutmeg abounds; from Banda we reached Amboyna, the capital of the Moluccas, and our starting-point for New Guinea. While we were making preparations for the voyage we determined to visit the island of Bourro, and Wahai in the island of Ceram. We left Amboyna on board the "*Dasson*," a steamer belonging to the Dutch fleet, on the 10th of March, and landed at a village, which we had descried at a great distance by the aid of its many mosques. This village, whose houses are built of wood and covered with palm-leaves, is called Kaieli. Entering the bay, we saw on the right a plain, on the left and in the background a range of hills, forming an amphitheatre. In the lower part grows a plant called the *kaju-puti*, from which an oil, of great virtue in the cure of rheumatism, is expressed. Tobacco, which is, probably, sold as pure Virginian, is grown here by some American settlers.

The Resident of Amboyna was a passenger on board the "*Dasson*," and a number of people were waiting to meet him at the landing-place, and pay their compliments. When he disembarked music struck up—of a curious sort, as may be imagined, for the instruments were all

gongs of various dimensions. Three or four dozen warrior-dancers, or dancer-warriors, dressed after the fashion of the East, in white tunics and red turbans, and with naked feet, formed an escort. Each of these held in his right hand a large knife called a parang, in his left a small shield. Brandishing their knives and shields, and twisting their bodies into a thousand contortions, they preceded the great man. The scene was at once striking and grotesque, and to me, as I was quite unaccustomed to such sights, the mixture of brilliant colours, and the extraordinary motions and gestures, had something most fantastic, singular, and novel.

Fourteen rajas, or chiefs, of the tribes of which the village was composed, followed the Resident, who, when he arrived at a house situated at the end of a long street, sat down on a kind of throne, surrounded by all the notabilities of the country. The music continued until a sign from the Resident put a stop to it, and also to the dancing. Besides these rajas there were people of all ranks. Some were dressed, half in Turkish, half in European style; some had shoes, others had none; most of the garments had once been black, but were now reddish and greenish in colour, and had never been made for the wearers. I remarked, however, that the people were cleanly in their persons and attire. Sundry tall hats, which presented every gradation of colour, and which, from their shape, might claim an antiquity greater, perhaps, than that of the celebrated Iron Crown, attracted my notice. They, like the crown of

Italy, had certainly passed from generation to generation.

After a voyage of twenty-four hours, under a deluge of rain, we arrived at Wahai. From the sea only a few houses were visible, most of them being concealed by the vegetation at the foot of the hills. A little fort stands close to the sea shore, and in it are stationed fifty soldiers and two officers. A military doctor and five or six white soldiers form the whole European population, who naturally live the life of anchorites. We had a letter of introduction to the Commandant of the little fort, and on our presenting it he received us with all the politeness of the Dutch. He had been there for three years. He offered us his house, but he received us in the verandah. A shooting expedition was arranged for the next day: there are deer and wild boar in the island. We were much vexed at our failure to obtain any information about Outanata, a point of New Guinea which we had fixed upon as our goal.

The next day I went out shooting. I saw deer and wild boar, but only succeeded in killing some of the latter, although the former were very numerous.

As we could not procure either guides or interpreters for Outanata we returned to Ambayna.

At last, on the 21st of March, the Italian colours were flying at the mast of a little schooner, which we had hired to take us to Outanata. It was called "Burong Laut," or Sea Bird.

I had also hoisted a second flag; it was

white, with a red cross. This had been my companion on the snowy steeps of the Alps; now it accompanied me on the deep. In the murmuring sound which it gave forth when shaken by the breeze, it seemed to me that I heard its voice, asking why had capricious destiny sent it from the snow mountains of the Alps to flutter from the mast of a ship under the burning rays of a tropical sun? But there was no answer, and my faithful banner went fluttering gaily on, my companion by sea and mountain.

Some gentlemen and ladies of Amboyna accompanied us on board to wish us a prosperous voyage. A few bottles of champagne were produced to drink to the safety and welfare of the ship, and then, after much hand-shaking, we took our departure. Signora Kraal, an Italian by birth, and married to a Dutchman, Captain Kraal, bade us a last farewell in the name of our country. Now all these ceremonies are concluded, and we are alone with our crew. Fly, O "Burong Laut!" fly, O "Sea Bird!" and carry us far, far away!

On the 25th, at 9 a.m., after having passed to the south of the island of Ceram, we arrived at the little islands of Ghesser and Kalvari, where we found a schooner from Macassar and two praus at anchor. It appears that they visit this island—which is a commercial emporium in these seas—to obtain slaves, skins of the bird of paradise, a small quantity of tripang, mother-of-pearl, and tortoise-shell. Some of the traders are Malays, and others Arabs. Besides the birds of paradise, the houses are full of cockatoos, lorries, and other birds of brilliant plumage, which

are taken alive to Macassar. I also saw two young cassowaries, free, but quite tame. Nearly all these articles of commerce come from New Guinea, especially the slaves. The inhabitants of the island of Ghesser are mostly Malays, and all are employed in trade, and probably in piracy also. The island is simply a vast sandbank, covered with scanty vegetation, and for the most part inundated at high tide. In the centre, however, the natives—or rather, the inhabitants—grow a few bananas and yams. In this cultivation the women, who are Papuan slaves, and the children, are employed. These degraded creatures fled at my approach, and the impression they made upon me was a painful one. I have never seen a lower type of humanity. They present only a coarse physical resemblance to man, but seem to be totally without the spirit characteristic of the human race—to be, indeed, reduced to the condition of beasts of burden.

At Ghesser we hoped to obtain information, and perhaps interpreters for Outanata or Lakaia, by opening communications with a chief or raja. I had my doubts, however, as to the success of our attempt.

A beautiful dog, which had been given me at Amboyna, and which I hoped to take with me to New Guinea, wanted to follow me when he saw me leaving the ship, and jumped into the sea. Poor animal! His affection for me cost him his life, for the strong current carried him away, and the efforts made by my men to save him were of no avail. Towards five o'clock we touched



at another small island, and found it inhabited chiefly by Papuan slaves, who on seeing us fled, and hid themselves; but afterwards, believing that we had not seen them, they followed us. When we re-embarked they came down to the shore, uttered a howl, and again fled. They then returned, and repeated this performance several times. Most of them were completely naked, and several were afflicted with the skin disease called "cascado."

*March 26th.*—This morning, taking one of my men, I landed at the island of Ceram Laut, and remained there until eleven, collecting insects. This island is also inhabited by Papuan slaves, who live in the most wretched houses, if one can call them houses at all. The women and children fled into their abodes, and stood peering at us curiously through the chinks. The island is covered with vegetation and partly cultivated. Those hills which I ascended are of coralline formation. I observed some gigantic fig-trees, which, with their mighty aerial roots, inspire every traveller in these regions with admiration. All round the island extends a bar of coral, where one may see countless varieties of living polyps. The raja, who yesterday promised to give us guides for Outanata, came on board to-day, accompanied by another man; the difficulties, far from diminishing, had increased, so that it looked as if we should have to go by ourselves. It occurred to me that they were doing all in their power to hinder us from going to Outanata; and as, after much talking, we were convinced that this really was the case, we determined to go

alone. We weighed anchor in the afternoon, hoping to find guides at Goram Island.

*March 27th.*—This morning I looked for the island of Goram, which we sighted last night, and to which we were then apparently near. But Goram was now very far off; during the night the current had drifted us farther away. A light breeze, however, carried us forward in the early morning, and at last we could distinguish the houses of a village on the island; but at five o'clock we were completely becalmed, and lay motionless on the waters. The monotony of a day's calm was pleasantly broken by the gambols of a shoal of "*Ikan babi*," or dolphins, which surrounded our ship; and the time passed pleasantly while we watched their prodigious leaps out of the sea, and their agile movements in the calm and transparent water. Countless thousands of sea birds followed them, and these creatures of the heights and the depths lent an aspect full of life, and which could not fail to interest for hours the most *ennuyé* traveller to the lonely scene.

*March 28th.*—At 1 a.m. I went upon deck, and saw Goram still farther off than last night. Our sails were hanging idly from the masts, the sea was apparently motionless, but, nevertheless, it was drawing us back. I saw some sea birds perched on bits of wood, passing by us; they were carried along by the current. At 6 a.m. we were still farther from Goram. At midday we were nearer to Ceram than the island for which we were bound. At 5 p.m. the thunder growled to the north of the island of Ceram, and we could see that rain was falling there. At length

the storm reached us, the sails filled, and our "Sea Bird" began to fly. To-day, also, I have to return thanks to the flying fish and dolphins and sea birds, who by their gambols broke the monotony of a second day of calm.

*March 29th.*—It is 6 a.m., and Goram is farther from us than the first morning when we sighted it after leaving Ghesser. The hopes which we entertained last night died away with the wind. Now the lightest of breezes hardly flutters the sails. Is it the strong current only that is carrying us from Goram? I have my suspicions that the current is only an accomplice of the ill-will and the negligence of the captain. At midnight I found the men at the wheel sleeping soundly. I returned at 3 a.m.; they were still sleeping; and at last, at half-past 5 a.m., I found them for the third time sleeping, like the Apostles in the Garden. This evening, towards six, we had changed our course, and lost sight of Goram. "All roads lead to Rome," says the proverb; and an old Sardinian taught me, one morning while I was hunting in the island of Sardinia, that the direct road is not always the shortest. We shall see whether we get any nearer to the island of Goram by the new route.

*April 1st.*—The 30th and 31st March were merely repetitions of the preceding day. We drew somewhat nearer to Goram by day, and by night lost all the way we had made. Last night, however, we had come close enough to the island to be able to distinguish the houses of the village for which we were steering. This morning, at sunrise, we were once more farther away than the

night before, and in my vexation I wondered whether Telemachus was more hindered in his adventurous journey than we, and hoped that Goram might not prove Circe's island to us.

At eight o'clock a light breeze sprang up, accompanied by slight rain; this sent us along several miles an hour. At three we prepared to cast anchor, but for reasons best known to the captain we were not fairly anchored in front of the village until nearly six o'clock. A little prau with three men hailed us, and they were at once led to talk about Outanata. They offered us a man for Lakaia; I have, however, great doubts of their fine promises. It appears that in these regions lying is one of the highest virtues; it is certainly one of the commonest. We had anchored opposite the house where Wallace lived. Low hills, covered with vegetation, rising in the rear of a small plain, are charming features of this locality. On some of the hills a little farther to the south we saw some kaju-puti trees. A crowd of people ran to the shore to see us; but their curiosity was not gratified: we did not land on that occasion.

*April 2nd.*—While Dr. Beccari was arranging with the natives how we were to be supplied with guides, I, with one of my hunters, followed by a goodly crowd of boys belonging to the place, went on a shooting expedition. In this new country every bird was a novelty to me, and even the white cockatoos were sufficient to excite my enthusiasm; yet I did not fire my first shots at these poor birds, with their white feathers and yellow diadems, without remorse. Fortunately, cockatoos in their

wild state cannot talk, and they did not reproach me with my cruelty ; but the blood which stained their white plumage bore eloquent witness against me. After the cockatoos came pigeons, and I esteemed myself most fortunate in procuring some fine specimens of a large pigeon (*Carpophaga concinna*), the entire back a glittering metallic green, and also of a smaller but most beautiful species (*Ptilopus prasinorrhous*). I found some gigantic bats (*Pteropus*) hanging on a tree, and these also fell victims to my greedy gun.

The men of Goram, mostly of the Malay type, are nearly naked ; but the females, with the exception of some old women, are slightly clothed. The boys are generally naked. Being Moham-medans, they have taken care to instil a holy horror of foreigners into their women, who at our approach fled as though from mad dogs, and hid themselves in their houses or behind the trees. The girls, who up to the age of eight or ten are generally naked, are not so much afraid of us, sometimes they would even draw near to receive presents. This morning, while out shooting, I was ascending a hill by a very narrow path, and suddenly came upon a party of six or seven women, some of them old, the others young. When we met, we were not more than eight or ten paces apart. They stopped instantly on beholding me ; and, as a herd of deer, taken by surprise, will pause for an instant and then speed away headlong, so did they. After having looked at me for a few seconds with terrified amazement, they did not retrace their steps, but fled one and all across the ridge of the hill down the slope. But, poor

things ! their precipitate flight availed them little ; for the second caught her foot in a weed or a stalk of the bamboo with which the ground was covered, and fell ; and the others, all except the last, rolled over her. The scene was most comical, and the boys who were following me jeered and laughed at the discomfiture of the women. Although, as a European, I felt that my duty was to give these savages a lesson, and teach them not to laugh at the misfortunes of others, I could not myself refrain from laughing. This incident, however, did not arrest the flight of the women ; they scrambled to their feet and ran more swiftly than before ; and for some minutes I could trace their course by the noise of broken bamboos and the shaking of the branches. In the stampede some of the women dropped the piece of cloth which forms their only garment—an accident which must have caused them no small embarrassment on re-entering the village. Others left behind them the earthenware pots used for cooking sago. To what sentiment did they yield ? Is the white man so hideous in their eyes that he excites such fear as this ? It seemed to me that, seeing us accompanied by natives of the country, they ought not to have been so terrified.

*April 3rd.*—Beccari has succeeded in finding two men who say they know the language spoken at Lakaia, and it is arranged that at the rising of the moon to-night we shall set out with them for that country. I went out shooting again, and collected some beautiful insects.

We have to contend with a strong south wind, which, if it continue to blow, will render

it very difficult for us to make the point we had fixed upon. We are now within sight of the island of Matabella.

*April 5th.*—To-day, at last, we have sighted New Guinea! After a night of rain, on going on deck this morning I descried mountains, although indeed indistinctly. In the afternoon, we were near enough to the land to distinguish the trees and shrubs on the slopes. This point which we have seen must be the peninsula which is marked on the map as Orange Nassau.

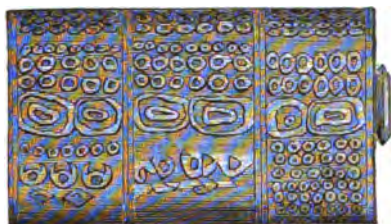
*April 6th.*—As we might have foreseen, we have not made much progress this morning, and it becomes clear to us that the season of the year is too far advanced and the monsoon too strong to allow us to proceed to the southward. At midday we lost sight of New Guinea, and in its place Goram appeared, close at hand. The sea is heavy, and our "Burong Laut," far from flying, can make no way at all, but rather goes backward than forward. The sailors caught a huge fish with a line which they had thrown out astern, but as they were dragging it on board it managed to get away, leaving them to lament the loss of the good supper they had reckoned upon.

The wind appears to have set in from the south-east.

*April 7th.*—We are losing rather than making way; to-day we are farther than ever from New Guinea, and are, instead, close to the island of Manwolka. It is certain that we cannot reach Outanata, so we decide on sailing towards some other point, and change our course to the north-west. I passed part of the day in

practising rifle-shooting, to the detriment of the dolphins.

*April 8th.*—This morning we again saw the land of Orange Nassau, which our Goram pilots called Tangion Bair, and at midday we were quite close to it. There was so much sea on that we resolved to anchor in a bay which was sheltered by mountains from the wind. The coast is precipitous, and the sea washes the base of the hills, which extend in an unbroken line, and rise to a height of seven or eight hundred feet. Nothing was to be seen but a mass of vegetation,



Carved bamboo for lime.

and the coast appeared to be entirely uninhabited. We did not see either houses or smoke. At sunset we anchored in a lovely bay, at a distance of about one hundred yards from the beach. Although there appeared to be no inhabitants, we took the precaution of keeping our arms and ammunition ready. Our Amboynese were in such terror of the Papuans, that they prepared to sleep with their guns beside them. Fish abound in the bay, and we passed part of the night in fishing, with great success. A Sula, attracted by the light of the ship's lantern, flew against it with such force as to upset it and break it to pieces. The



poor bird expiated its rashness, and the trifling damage it had done us, with its life.

*April 9th.*—A memorable day! At last I tread the mysterious land. At last, leaping on shore this morning, I exclaimed, “We are in New Guinea!”



## CHAPTER II.

Our first day on shore in New Guinea—A primeval forest in reality, as contrasted with a primeval forest in imagination—Kangaroos—Spiders' webs—Birds—Faor Island—A huge lizard—*Cuscus Maculatus*—Casuarina-trees—Kapaor—Boughis traders—Various types among the natives—In se arch of massoi—We ascend the mountain, and find a delusion at the top—Rajas—Farewell to Kapaor.

THE wind continuing to blow hard, and the sea being very rough, we determined to spend the day on shore. Although during the night we had not seen fires anywhere, and had every reason to suppose that the coast was not inhabited, we nevertheless landed well armed. We disembarked at a little beach covered with the detritus of old coral, as white as snow. We made diligent search, but did not succeed in discovering any recent traces of man; but we saw an old hut, which at some time or other must have afforded shelter to unfeathered bipeds like ourselves. Beccari, and David, one of our servants, took one direction; I, with Mesac, took another; while the captain and his armed men remained on the shore to guard the boat. It was a real pleasure to me to walk a little on dry land, after having passed so many days at sea, and all the greater because the land was Papua, the country of my dreams. At last I was roaming through a primeval forest,

in a free country, which had never as yet owned a master.

I cannot find words to describe my joy when, with the first shot from my gun—doubtless the first which had ever echoed through these forests—I killed a magnificent hooded pigeon (*Goura coronata*); nor can I express the interest with which I saw some kangaroos, hopping along with such extraordinary velocity that no one could even think of killing them. Only to observe these animals in the Zoological Gardens is not to know what they really are; they must be seen in their native forests; and no one can behold them for the first time without being roused to the highest pitch of enthusiasm. I was so pleased at finding myself in a primeval forest that I wanted to run about everywhere. But I suffered for my inexperienced impulse; now a thorn pierced my clothes and tore my skin; now a liane, stretched across my path, would throw me down, gun in hand, damaging my hands and knees, and putting me in peril of my life from the gun; again, a spider's web, which had widely spread its insidious snares, would cling to my face and beard, while the spiders fell on my hands, neck, and face, producing a singularly unpleasant sensation. After a ramble of several hours, I had to acknowledge that, after all my dreams, a primeval forest is not the earthly paradise. It was long, nevertheless, before I made up my mind to return on board with the birds I had killed, and which, being the first shot by me in New Guinea, are among my most cherished treasures.

*April 10th.*—I was preparing to go on shore

again to-day, when the captain said he wished to sail. Although it seemed to us that the wind blew stronger and the sea ran higher, we offered no opposition, and towards 8 a.m. we weighed anchor and were soon out of the bay. The wind proved to be so high and the sea so rough, that, after several hours of labour in vain, the captain resolved to cast anchor again, and selected a little island, called Karas by the natives, but Godin on the map. We arrived there about 2 p.m., and while we were looking about for an anchorage in front of a little village, a raja came and advised us, perhaps in his own interest, to go and anchor at another small island close at hand, to which he himself piloted us. This was Faor Island, and we reached it a little before sunset, but in time to go on shore for a while. We anchored in front of a small village, if two or three houses may be so called. A portion of the inhabitants are pure Papuans, and mostly slaves; the masters are of a mixed race of Papuans and Malays. The men are generally nude, but some of the women are decently clad in pieces of coloured cotton. They did not appear to be so timid as the natives of the other island recently visited by us, and they were very friendly. As I was about to return on board, I heard a cry raised by some women and children near a house, and on asking what was the matter with them, I was told they were frightened by the sight of a snake, which they had discovered on the verandah of the house. I easily earned the gratitude of these good people by killing the snake which had caused so much alarm, and which was of a harmless species.

*April 11th.*—Our anchorage of yesterday was not a very safe one, so we went farther away, and anchored in front of two other houses. Here we found the people well disposed towards foreigners, and the women not afraid of us. They are sufficiently civilized to know the value of Dutch dollars, but prefer to trade by barter in kind. The women accorded a special preference to some bottles, which they took in exchange for very fine lemons. The island is hilly and rugged, but clothed with exquisite vegetation. The nutmeg and canarium abound, and tobacco is also grown by the natives. From time to time they are visited by a ship from Macassar, to barter calico, knives, &c., for the products of the island, and for tortoise-shell and mother-of-pearl. The island is rich in spring water, which gushes, sparkling, from the hill-sides. Accompanied by some of the inhabitants, I made a tour of the island, and made acquaintance with a huge lizard (*Monitor indicus*), which attracted my admiration during the five minutes I stopped to watch him catching insects and frogs on a rock where there was some running water. I secured him for my collection by a blow from my gun-stock. Among other birds, I obtained a kingfisher. These birds are among the most lovely denizens of the forest, and are especially remarkable for their beautiful sky-blue head and red beak, but above all for the two long centre feathers of the tail, which the natives sometimes use for head ornaments. We planned an excursion to the opposite coast of New Guinea for tomorrow.

April 12th.—The men who yesterday promised to act as our guides to the coast of New Guinea, were nowhere to be seen ; so, rather than remain on board, I again landed to shoot and to collect insects. My bag for the day consisted of a very curious animal, with short, thick fur with irregular white and tawny spots. The shape of its muzzle, its extremities, which are something between the foot of the mammifera and the hand of the ape, and especially its prehensile tail, partly divested of hair, affording the animal, which is arboreal, the means of travelling safely from branch to branch, render it curious. This animal is called by naturalists *Cuscus maculatus*. I sat myself down in the shade of a beautiful tree, near a house, to prepare the skins of my birds, and so collected around me an inquisitive crowd of men, women, and children.

This afternoon a prau arrived, bringing the news of the death of a man related in some way to one of the women of the village. The bereaved woman, so soon as she heard the sad intelligence began to utter her lamentation, with long wailings, varying them, however, with a song, which might easily have been taken for one of joy. All the other women and girls joined in chorus with her, with alternate high and low notes, hideously discordant ; but after a time they left her to lament her loss and continue her wailing alone.

In the evening, after we had ceased to hope for their appearance, the two men whom we expected arrived, and promised to guide us to-morrow to Kulokadi, on the coast of New Guinea.

*April 13th.*—This morning a light breeze filled our sails, and carried the "Burong Laut" swiftly along over the smooth water, and we could see a great stretch of the coast of New Guinea to the east of us. We saw on the right the mountains of Orange Nassau, which gradually increase in height with their greater distance from the shore; the clouds, however, hindered us from taking their true altitude. In the foreground are low hills and plains, covered with mangrove plantations. Towards midday we anchored in a bay, whose shores were all white with the detritus of shells and coral, cast up by the waves. Lofty casuarina-trees form a girdle all round the beach, except on the right, where there are only mangroves. Before landing we had seen two canoes and some men on the beach, and I hoped they were Alfuros, that is to say, the true inhabitants of New Guinea, and, better still, of the mountain; but when we landed I was undeceived. Instead of running away, like savages, they came to meet us, and offered us dried fish. It appears, moreover, that they are not natives of the place, but inhabitants of Faor, whence they came to fish in these waters.

On the casuarina-trees were perched multitudes of beautiful bright-coloured parrots (*Trichoglossus cyanogrammus*), looking at a distance like red flowers. On penetrating into the forest, I found a number of hooded pigeons, and succeeded in killing sufficient for dinner to-day and to-morrow. In happy ignorance of the nature of a mangrove forest, I ventured into one, but I came out of it having learned a lesson which I shall not easily forget. Besides the mangrove woods, there

are low hills covered with dense vegetation and abounding with birds.

*April 14th.*—To-day I returned to the forest, but in a new direction. I climbed some hills, and found several paths which show that the locality is frequented, if not inhabited. In several places I found ashes and heaps of shells, which bore witness to the presence of man. My guide told me that the Alfuros, inhabitants of the mountains, came down sometimes to the seashore in search of shells and fish. We, however, did not succeed in finding any recent traces of them. I remained on shore until nightfall, but did not add any birds to those I had already obtained, except a talegallo (*Talegallus fuscirostris*), the first of this kind I have shot. I brought him down from a high tree, to which he had probably retired to roost.

*April 15th.*—This morning we returned to Faor, and resolved to steer from thence to the north-west, in search of a place where we might establish ourselves, perceiving, as we now did, that it was useless to endeavour to reach Outanata on the present occasion. We also heard that on the coast, at no great distance, there was a place called Kapaor, which is frequented at this season by Boughis traders from Macassar, and we were also told that at present there were seven large praus there. Having landed the raja Bigor, who had accompanied us, and taken in a good store of cocoa-nuts, we departed in the afternoon, but at sunset, owing to the absence of a wind, we had not yet lost sight of the island of Faor.

*April 16th.*—Towards evening, we at length

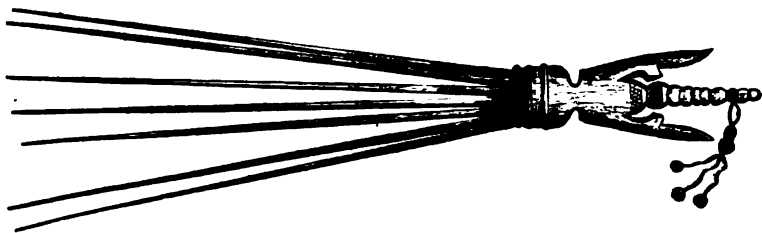


approached Pangian Island, in about 3° south latitude. Some canoes soon came alongside; in them were several natives; they offered themselves as pilots, and brought us by sunset to the opening of a bay, or rather straits, formed by the island and the coast of New Guinea. A continuous chain of hills runs from opposite Faor to Kapoor, all, as usual, clothed with the richest vegetation. As we had been informed, we found seven large Boughis boats here, and their captains came to greet us. In a short time we were surrounded by a crowd of canoes, and natives; the latter unarmed. They stayed with us until a late hour. They are apparently gentle, harmless people. An old chief promised to act as our guide to-morrow in an excursion we had planned, and gave us good news about birds; it appears that there are at least four species of birds of paradise. The traders from Macassar informed us, also, that there is a place here whence they obtain massoi, that is, a kind of bark, which they believe to possess medicinal properties.

*April 17th.*—Towards 8 a.m. we went on board a Boughis prau, and had some conversation with the captain. He was a civil, well-educated man. He gave us some information about the country, and presented us with the skin of a Papuan bird of paradise, prepared by the natives. We afterwards went on shore with the chief who last night promised to act as our guide. We first proceeded up the almost dry bed of a little stream; among the bushes on its banks I found a great number of a beautiful species of insect, which

emits a peculiar scent of roses. I remarked that the odour proceeded from a blackish liquid which exudes from the mouth of the insect (*Therates*). We crossed some hills and visited a few houses, where we found the people kindly disposed, and quiet. Neither the children nor the women showed any dread of us, but were very friendly, and kindly offered us water, also bananas and parched Indian corn; the latter were excellent, the former was execrable. The women even evinced sufficient curiosity and courage to wish to investigate the colour of our skins under our clothes, evidently not believing the tint of our faces and hands to be natural. I did not see any pretty women. Near one of the houses I saw a *Mino Dumontii* flying over a great fig-tree. I was about to shoot it, but the women prevented me from doing so. I cannot say whether this was because they held the tree or the bird in veneration, or because they were afraid of the gun, notwithstanding that some of the natives themselves possess flint guns. The women use tobacco, and smoked in our company. Great activity reigned in many of the houses, and men and women were working together preparing nutmegs for shipment. We passed in front of some houses whose owners were absent; a thick stick was placed across the door as a sign that entrance was forbidden to anyone who did not belong to the family. The men go about naked, with the exception of a waistcloth of bark. The women wear a sort of petticoat (sarong) of cotton cloth, but their shoulders and breasts are uncovered. Both men and women generally wear silver earrings

and bracelets, which they get from the people of Macassar; but more commonly they have bracelets made of shells, or black coral, and others woven of grass, feathers, and leaves. They generally wear bracelets on their wrists, and upon their arms as high as the armpits, and occasionally, but not often, bangles on their ankles. They have also rough rings of fishbone, carved by themselves. The men are of middle height and well built; the women are often plump, and their busts are beautiful. They are not black, but in general much darker than the Malays, and in some cases they are nearly black. Their hair, which they do not generally allow to grow long, is crisp and curly, and they adorn their heads with a long comb of bamboo ornamented with feathers.



Bamboo Comb.

This ornament is sometimes of pretty design and workmanship, and it also serves to dislodge certain parasites which abound in the heads of the Papuans. Most of the men wear short thick beards. I observed great variety of type, which may be accounted for by there being slaves of several different tribes among these people, and also because the Malay element prevails here.

Their chiefs are Malays or of mixed race; and the mixture of Malay, which began a long time ago,

is on the increase, as many of the natives have been converted to Islamism, and on the coast they have Mussulman priests and mosques. Now although we have only recently become aware that this part is frequented by Mahometans, who can tell whether it has not been so for many generations? It is my belief that it takes only a short time to change the type of small populations like these tribes of Papua. I believe that in fifty years, if the number of women be limited, the aspect of a tribe may be so changed that a traveller who visited it fifty years previously would not take it to be the same. The original type would not indeed have disappeared, but it would have become rare, or greatly altered. This opinion is founded on my observation of the great varieties of type, in colouring, physiognomy, and the shape of the skull, to be met with here. For example, the hair is curled in every case, but in some much more crisply than in others. I saw several natives whose type, at least in colour, might be called European, while others were of the true Arab. The predominating type, however, appeared to me to be distinguished by a high retreating forehead. The compression of the parietal bones gives prominence to the superorbital arches, under which the eyes are deep set. The nose—aquiline in some instances, straight, and sometimes turned up, in others—is of itself enough to indicate a diversity of type. The mouth presents as many varieties, although in general the lips are thick and rather large, but they by no means resemble those of the Ethiopian negro.

Seeing the natives all so intent on their work

in the houses—or rather, I should say, in the warehouses—where the nutmeg is stored ; knowing the real business they transact, and the confidence with which they have inspired the Macassar merchants, who pay them for their commodities in advance from year to year in arms and cloth, I cannot but believe that this trade, though kept secret at Macassar, has existed for a long time.

The proposed excursion in search of massoi was put off until to-morrow. On returning to the ship we received a number of visitors, among whom came the young raja of Hatti-atti, a village which lies at the entrance of MacClure Gulf. This potentate, a youth of eighteen or twenty years old, was at once shy and friendly. He arrived in an ornamented prau, with a gong beating, and, coming on board with two of his crew, presented us with some arrows and two live lories. His face was of the Arab type, and he spoke Malayese. Being asked if his subjects were good people, he said he could not answer for them. He told us he was a Mussulman, as are all his subjects. He was attired in pantaloons, and a jacket or blouse of peculiar shape. On his head he wore a red fez. I have no doubt about his being a true Mussulman from his manner of saluting and touching hands, but in spite of Mahomet, he is fond of the accursed arrack (an alcoholic drink, or rather, alcohol itself) which he drinks as though it were water. A short time after he had taken leave, another raja, also of Hatti-atti, came to pay his respects. He was attired like the first, and, like him, also a Mussulman, and an even greater lover of arrack, while holding the Koran in an

equal degree of veneration. We asked him also if his subjects were good people; and he replied: "How shall I, their chief, speak evil of them?" However, he spoke evil of the other raja, and said that there would probably be war between them. It appears that the people of Hatti-atti had chosen the first as their ruler, while those of Kapaor preferred our interlocutor. He said he wished the Dutch would interfere in their quarrel, in order to afford him protection against his rival. Although in some things he resembled the first comer, a savage expression in his eyes made him look anything but agreeable. A third raja then came to welcome us; this was a taciturn old man, who hung his head, and glanced furtively right and left with his small eyes. His aspect was, however, savage and cruel. He was almost bald, and two deep scars of ancient date were visible on his skull and forehead. He told us how he had received these two wounds in his youth, speaking in a low tone, as though he were ashamed to admit that he had been weaker or less fortunate than his adversary; but suddenly raising his head, with a smile on his face, he exclaimed, "But I killed two of them on that day!" His eyes sparkled with a sinister expression; then, as if the deadly scene which he had conjured up for a moment had vanished, he again hung his head, his chin fell on his breast, and he remained silent as before. He too was a Mussulman, but, unlike the others, he refused to drink arrack. He promised to sell us the skulls of some lately slain persons, which he knew could be obtained in a neighbouring island. It would

appear from this that there are head-hunters among these people, but I never saw any skulls affixed to the doors of the houses which we visited.

*April 19th.*—These natives occasionally keep their promises, and in fact this morning they came on board to take us to the mountains where the massoi grows. Our way lay through the bed of a torrent for some hours. There was but little water, the channel was wide, and our path up it was by no means a pleasant one or interesting to me, for I did not catch sight of either bird or beast. Having entered the forest, we saw buceros, gowras, and some other small species of birds of no great account. Afterwards our way for some hours lay through narrow paths, which led up the sides and slopes of the hills. Birds became scarcer than ever. We walked in Indian file, having no chance of conversation. The silence of the forest was almost sepulchral, and owing to the soft ground, not even our footsteps made any sound, while the trees were so thick that we could only see a few yards ahead. But we had to find the renowned massoi plant, and so we walked on at a smart pace without being fatigued, and tried to admire and feel interest in everything we saw, including an old trunk of a tree—which was neither more nor less than an old trunk of a tree.

At last our guide halted at the top of a hill, turned to Beccari, and showing him a small shrub, about a yard in height, told him that it was a young massoi plant. After so much toil and expectation, this seemed a wretched result. The guide added that lofty massoi-trees grow

farther up on the heights of the mountains, but that it was too late to go so far, and that we must then return to the coast; but he promised Beccari that he would bring him flowers, fruit, and leaves of the massoi plant, without fail. I strongly suspect that we returned on board without having seen the mysterious massoi at all. If the ascent was fatiguing, the descent was no less so, for the path was very slippery, and we had much ado to keep our footing. I returned, very ill-pleased with my day, as I had only procured a few birds and one little snake (*Dendrophis punctulatus*).

*April 20th.*—This was the day on which the massoi and the heads were to have been brought to us by the natives; but we saw nothing of either, although, in hopes of their arrival on the morrow, we put off our departure. I obtained a magnificent snake (*Liasis Albertisii* n. sp.) from the natives, belonging to the Python family; with the exception of the head, which is deep blue, or indeed almost black, with metallic reflections, the upper part of its body is dark copper colour, very brilliant in the sunlight, while the under portion of it is yellow.

*April 21st.*—The natives brought us some leaves and fruit of a plant which, they said, was the massoi, but no flowers. The promised heads did not appear, and we resolved to depart on the morrow for the island of Sorong, which lies between the island of Salwattee and the extreme north-east point of New Guinea. This point is already known, Bernstein and Mr. Allen, Mr. Wallace's assistant, having visited it.



*April 22nd.*—At 6 p.m, taking advantage of the current, we left the straits formed by the island of Pangian and the coast of New Guinea, and bade farewell to Kapaor and its semi-civilized inhabitants.

*April 23rd.*—At sunrise we found ourselves off the extreme point of Onin, the name given by the natives to the peninsula in question. The wind was light, and we could make but little way. We passed close to several islets, all covered with luxuriant vegetation and abounding in birds, whose notes reached our ears. At midday we passed through the straits formed by an island called by the natives "Battu Puti," or White Stone, because the sides of its cliffs, washed by the sea, are white. Here we found our chart so incorrect that it was difficult for us to tell exactly where we were. At 5 p.m., having left Battu Puti Island astern, we met a prau with some people on board, who made signs that they wished to come alongside. They were two men, a boy, a woman, and a child; they were armed with a gun, and bows and arrows, and several spears tipped with the bones of the cassowary. One of the men was of the Malay type, and spoke that language; the other, who was very strongly built and well proportioned, and who had a very intelligent face, was probably a slave. After a little hesitation they came on board, and told us they had come from Hatti-atti; they fixed our position for us, and what they said confirmed our perception of the incorrectness of the chart. They gave us a little fish, and asked for a portion of everything we possessed, from rice

to arrack, although they professed to be strict Mahometans.

*April 25th.*—We had a fair wind and a favourable current throughout the night, so that this morning we sighted Point Sele, marked “English Point” on the map. The wind continued fair all day, and towards evening, we arrived off Salwattee Island, and cast anchor about half a mile from a village called Seilolo. The captain went on shore to look for a pilot to take us to Sorong, but he returned at nightfall without having succeeded in his quest. It appeared that all the men of Seilolo were away in the neighbouring islands, fishing for tripang (*Oloturia*). During the day, we passed several picturesque islands, and saw the usual shoals of dolphins. I succeeded in catching a fine sea-snake, rather more than a yard in length, whitish in colour, with ash-coloured rings. I saw several other species, but did not succeed in capturing them; one in particular was very large, and marked with black and yellow rings.

*April 26th.*—Not having succeeded in getting a pilot, we resolved to pass through Pitt Straits, instead of those of Galevo. Weighing anchor at daybreak, we directed our course to Battanta Island, which lies opposite Salwattee, and with it forms the channel just mentioned. The breeze was light, and we did not arrive at the entrance to the straits until 4 p.m. The thunder growled in the distance, and the mist and rain prevented our seeing the summits of the mountains in Battanta. When we were about to enter the straits the wind died away, and we were obliged to have re-

course to oars; but the current being against us, so soon as we were inside we anchored, in a little creek off an island in mid-channel, which prevented our seeing the houses of Battanta, although smoke from them was visible. Our entrance into the little bay disturbed a shoal of dolphins, which rose to the surface of the water, and gambolled and leaped around us.

In the evening a vast number of birds flew across from one island to another, principally white cockatoos, and the noisy buceros, with thousands of others, great and small. My attention was, however, chiefly attracted by a black cockatoo, which passed so near us that we could perfectly discern his curious head and still more curious beak. It was the first time I had seen a living specimen of this interesting species (*Microglossum aterrimum*).

The vegetation was luxuriant and various, and the hills with which we were surrounded were not so uniform and monotonous as those we had hitherto seen. The landscape was, in short, picturesque and pleasing. I had thought that as evening advanced all would be still; but sadly was I mistaken, for what with the gongs of the natives, the croaking of frogs, the chirping of thousands of grasshoppers, which made an astonishing din, the cries of the night-birds, and the noisy splashing of countless fish in the water, the night was no quieter than the day.

*April 27th.*—I was as ready to rise as the Burong Siam, a bird of the morning (*Tropidorhynchus novæ guineæ*), whose song is always heard a little before the sun is visible on the horizon; and

going ashore, I succeeded in killing a brace of birds, which, although not remarkable for the beauty of their plumage, were very interesting on account of a strange protuberance at the root of the upper beak. As I could not go far from the shore, an early hour being fixed for our departure, I succeeded in obtaining only some small reptiles and a few insects. The farther extremity of the bay where we were at anchor was completely covered with polypi and marine plants of wonderful variety, both in form and colour. Great numbers of small fishes glided about among these sea groves, rivalling the motionless inhabitants of the deep in brilliancy of colour and strangeness of form. The desire to possess myself of some of these beautiful fish led me to think of using a dynamite cartridge, although I recoiled from the idea of the ravages I should thus make among the wonderful works of nature. Still, selfishness got the better of me, and I employed the cartridge. For some unexplained reason it failed to explode, which pleased me so much that I did not try another, but returned to the ship. I found that some natives of Battanta had come on board. They were fine men, well made, and rather stout. Their characteristics were curly hair, high foreheads, large eyes, small, but not flat noses, and moderate-sized mouths. Their colour was dark bronze. They had no covering beyond a waistcloth, but they wore necklets, earrings, and bracelets. They gave us some fish, and asked for tobacco, knives, and bottles; they also offered us some tortoise-shell. At last, at 8 a.m. we set sail, but we had no wind, and it took us the whole day to get clear

of the straits. We sighted Pulo-Snapan Island, but the captain was afraid to approach it during the night, so we decided to lie-to until the morning.

We anchored early opposite a little village of Pulo-Snapan. The captain landed, to search for a pilot to take us to Salwattee. Some men in canoes came alongside, and exchanged cocoa-nuts and fish for knives and tobacco. At about ten o'clock, perceiving we should not depart until late, I made an expedition on shore. I found only two houses, and but few inhabitants, who fled when they saw me. I did not succeed in shooting any beautiful bird, but only a pteropus, and at mid-day I returned on board. A friendly youth, with two nice-looking women, came in a canoe, and left his two companions, in order to accompany us to Salwattee, which we reached at dusk.

## CHAPTER III.

Salwattee—We are received by the Orangtua—Sorong—Bernstein's house—An Englishman's grave—We take possession of our house and cultivate the natives, but with little result—My shooting expeditions—Fever—A boar hunt.

*April 29th.*—We landed early at the principal village of Salwattee. The raja being absent, we were received by some Orangtua, or old men, who have authority in the village. They resemble Malays more or less in their persons and in the way they dress and live. They have houses, furnished with a few seats, tables, and cupboards. They helped us to find two men to pilot us to Sorong Island. We left Salwattee at half-past 2 p.m., and at nightfall arrived at Sorong in a strong gale of wind, which obliged us to remain under cover; and owing to the rain and darkness we could discern no houses in the country in which we had resolved to take up our abode for some time.

*April 30th.*—When the three rajas who received us on landing this morning heard it was our intention to establish ourselves in the island, and to remain there as long as it pleased us, they did not appear to appreciate the honour which we designed to confer upon them, and among other questions, they asked us if we had letters from

the Sultan of Tidor? We told them at once that we had nothing to do with the Sultan, and that we had made up our minds to build a house for ourselves wherever it best suited us, either in the island itself, or on the opposite coast of New Guinea, which was only three-quarters of a mile distant. To give them time to decide which of the two alternatives, that of accepting us with a good will, or of putting up with us against their will, they would prefer, we first made a visit to the island, and then to the coast of New Guinea. There we saw the place where poor Bernstein's house stood; and also found a grave which contains the remains of a young Englishman, who died at sea in these parts, and was buried here by his own father; at least, so the natives told us. We then returned on board, having decided that it would be better to establish ourselves in the island. Several natives came in canoes to offer us tortoise-shell; they also brought the mutilated skins of five species of birds of paradise, among which I remarked the *Xanthomelus aureus*. The rajas consented to let us have an old house, built on piles on the seashore, and which at high tide, with the exception of the side which looks inland, is completely surrounded with water.

*May 1st.*—At 7 a.m. we took possession of our new abode, and began at once to disembark our baggage. Our house is situated on the shore, about fifty yards to the left of the other houses, looking to the east—though I might also say it was on the right, for the village extends the whole length of the seashore. All, or nearly all, the

houses are built, like ours, on piles, and are surrounded by water at high tide; some, indeed, at all times, and the people go to and fro by means of a bridge made of the trunks of small trees. At a distance of a little more than half a mile there is another small village, inhabited by people of a different race from those with whom we had taken up our abode. The former come from Mafor Island, in the Bay of Geelvink, while the latter are a mixture of Papuan and Malay, the Malay type predominating.

The country is in parts flat, and in parts mountainous; in the centre there is a small lagoon. Good and clear water is obtained from small excavated wells. A hill extends throughout the length of the island; its altitude is, however, under eighty feet. In parts the land has been cleared and cultivated by the natives; in parts it is wooded. Cocoa-nut trees grow here, as well as sugar-canes, yams, and papaia; and in the thickest part of the small portion of forest that remains, a kind of pine-apple is to be found. The village is, on the whole, clean, its impurities being all carried away by the tide. As the natives are Mussulmans they do not keep pigs, which are generally useful as scavengers; and I believe that they build their houses in the water that they may not have to trouble themselves on the score of cleanliness. A little in the rear of the houses are several tombs, some enclosed within a fence, others surrounded by stones; some, again, are protected by a roof. A piece of wood usually shows where the head of the corpse lies, and another marks the position of the feet.



The island is frequented by birds of a great many species, which fly backwards and forwards from the coast of New Guinea; but it is wanting in other animals, probably on account of its small size, and because it is so much cultivated. I succeeded, however, in seeing and shooting a *Cuscus maculatus* and a climbing kangaroo, or *Dendrolagus*; but as the natives often keep these animals in a domestic state, I cannot say whether they are natives of the island or not. The people, who appear to be quiet and hard-working, as their necessities demand, are mostly Mussulmans, and treat us with much respect. They are under three rajas, or sennagi, usually Mussulmans, and, in their turn, subject to the Sultan of Tidor, to whom they pay a yearly tribute. Although their religion allows polygamy, the natives have not many wives. They possess, however, a great number of slaves of both sexes. The men usually wear a sarong, or cotton petticoat, usually red, as do the women also. The wives of the sennagi rarely go about with their bosoms exposed; but the female slaves and servants are nearly naked, and girls of those classes, up to an age corresponding with thirteen or fifteen in Europe, are completely so. They did not appear to be conscious of their nudity; but I observed that if, when they passed by my window as they went to draw water, I directed curious looks at them, they would pause in confusion, and often, not succeeding in covering themselves, they would let their water-jars fall, partly hide themselves with their hands, or else they fled with precipitation. The males also go naked up to a certain age. In

a short time we made friends with everybody, and during my daily walk in search of birds and insects I was always accompanied by an escort of boys. The Maforese, who live at the extremity of the island, are a wilder race. The men and women are blacker, and less clothed, and, perhaps because they felt more independent, they were less respectful to us. The difference between the two groups of people was very marked.

Being here for the purpose of making collections, I have adopted the following system of life. In the morning, at daybreak, I go out shooting. I return to breakfast at eight, and afterwards I prepare the skins of the birds I have shot. At one we dine. At about two I again go forth in search of insects, which are not very numerous, and I also endeavour to shoot a bird or two, that I may have something to employ myself with in the evening.

We came to this island ten days ago, and, as I still continue to find new specimens of birds, I go on shooting, without much wish to proceed to the mainland—the less so, as not having yet succeeded in purchasing a canoe from the natives, it is not easy for us to get there. The island is frequented by numerous parrots. Near our house is a very lofty tree, and in the bark of some of its old branches a beautiful species of parrot (*Eclectus polychlorus*)—the male being green and the female red and blue—are building their nests. I have already shot several of them from my window. Another kind of parrot (*Tanygnathus megalorhynchus*), equally beautiful, is nesting in an old tree a little further off. Of this too

I have obtained some specimens. I observe that every morning a number of parrots of the former sort leave the island a little before sunrise, and having remained away all day, return in the evening. They always fly eastward.

*May 15th.*—It is hardly a fortnight since we disembarked on this island with our four servants, and to-day, all of us, with the exception of Beccari, have been attacked by fever. I had the consolation of seeing all the others down with it while I remained unattacked, but now I am grieved to have to admit that I also have taken it. To be attacked by a fever which they say is deadly, in a fortnight after my arrival, is certainly more than I bargained for, or expected. I can now testify thoroughly to the bitterness of quinine.

*June 3rd.*—During the days which have elapsed since I last wrote I have succeeded in purchasing a canoe from the natives for twelve silver dollars; and this morning, taking Mesac and Caccion and a Papuan with me, I went over to the coast of New Guinea to shoot. So soon as we landed my two men went in one direction and I, with the Papuan, went in another. The latter did not understand a word of Malay, nor I a word of his language. The forest was dense, and in many parts, from the profusion of creeping plants and other causes, our progress was very fatiguing. Towards mid-day, having expended all my cartridges except two charges of small shot, I was about to return to the shore where we had left the canoe when I suddenly came upon a wild boar. Without thinking whether I could kill him or not with small shot, I fired, and he disap-

peared. From the shortness of the range there could be no doubt but that the animal was wounded, and I could track him by the blood he shed. I at once called the Papuan, and explained to him by signs what had happened. He, like a good fellow, put himself on the track as if he had been a bloodhound, and followed the boar for about 500 yards over a marshy country, occasionally under water. I followed him, seeing nothing except that from time to time he made signs to show me he was still on the track of my victim. All at once he stopped, and pointing with his forefinger, showed me the boar, which was standing still and looking at us, twenty paces from my Papuan. I advanced, my gun in readiness, intending to get as close to the animal as possible, knowing that the charge in my gun was my last, and moreover, that it consisted of the smallest shot. When I had advanced seven or eight paces, I thought I should be able to shoot the boar dead; but he neither fell nor fled! On the contrary, before I had time to divine his intentions he was upon me, and carried away an important part of my trousers, without, however, tearing my skin. This did not appear to satisfy him, and he rushed at me a second time. I threw down my gun, seized my knife, and as there was not a tree to climb, and I did not like to run in case I should fall, I stood my ground awaiting the animal's attack. On he came, and received the knife in his neck; he drew back at once, but only to repeat his charge with increased ferocity. I, on my part, waited for him with greater coolness than before, and instead of giving him the

knife in his neck, let him have it just behind the shoulder. This time he retreated about twenty paces, and fell dead. The Papuan had disappeared, and I had to shout to him many times before he could make up his mind to return. At last both he and Caccion came, and when they had hoisted the boar on their shoulders, we thought to wend our way to the canoe. But lo! none of us knew the path. In fact, we had lost our way. I had no compass with me, and owing to the clouds and the thickness of the forest I could not see the sun. We wandered about for a couple of hours without being able to find a path. The Papuan seemed even more puzzled than I, and from time to time made signs to me that we might come across people who would cut our heads off. At last I determined to act as guide myself, and after some time I discovered our footsteps of that morning. Caccion in the meantime had unluckily disturbed a wasp's nest, and the enraged insects attacked us at once with the utmost fury. There was nothing for it but to throw down our pig and fly. When we reached the seashore Mesac was waiting for us, and I sent him back with the Papuan to fetch the boar. At last we reached our house, exhausted with hunger and fatigue, and, so far as I was concerned, ill satisfied with a first expedition on the mainland.

## CHAPTER IV.

The River Ramoi—The Alfuros—Short commons—Forest walks—A suspicious circumstance—The natives object to our presence, and charge us with causing the death of their children—A painful scene—Return to Sorong.

*June 13th.*—A few miles from Sorong Island, in a south-easterly direction, on the opposite coast, a little river called the Ramoi runs into the sea. Dr. Beccari had gone to a little village two miles from its mouth, and on his return gave me a description of the locality, which made me vehemently desire to pass some days there. Accordingly this morning, accompanied by Mesac, Caccion, and an old man, whom I took as an interpreter, I started for Ramoi.

The river is narrow, and almost dark, owing to the forests of lofty trees on its banks; and it has no striking beauty. After ascending for two or three miles, we came to a place where the land on both banks is cleared of timber. On the left we saw four or five houses, the foremost, built on piles about twenty feet high, was assigned to us. In its rear were the others, inhabited by the natives. In one, a long building with an earthen floor, the women and children live. Bananas, especially on the right bank, the sugarcane, gourds, yams, and Indian corn, are grown

by the natives; and behind these cultivated plains rises a range of hills completely covered with vegetation. The people present a most wretched appearance. They are smaller in stature, blacker, and more brutelike than any of those so-called Papuans whom we had hitherto seen—perhaps because they do not intermarry with other races. Both men and women came to see me, but it seemed to me that they were by no means too well pleased at my arrival, perhaps because they were afraid of me. My house is at about the distance of a gunshot from the river, and a little further off lies the great trunk of a tree, which, having fallen across from bank to bank, serves as a bridge.

*June 14th.*—To-day I went out shooting, but saw no birds of any interest. On my return I learned that one of the sennagi of Sorong had come, but that he had soon gone away again, and I was puzzled to think what he could have come for. To-day the natives refuse to sell me fish and bananas. Can he have ordered them to do so?

*June 15th.*—These people still refuse to bring me anything whatsoever; to-day they have come to the house. Some natives, however, belonging to those tribes called Alfuros, arrived, and agreed to sell me some trifling articles. The Alfuros strongly resemble the people of Ramoi, but are somewhat less of stature. Two of them had their hair dressed in an extraordinary fashion; it was divided into five or six tufts, and each tuft was drawn through a bamboo of two or three fingers' length. I had nothing but rice to eat; and if we did not supply our larder by shooting,

there would be little risk of our going to bed in any danger of bad dreams from indigestion. To-day, however, I managed to kill some large birds, and there was abundance. Caccion is by no means well; he has fever.

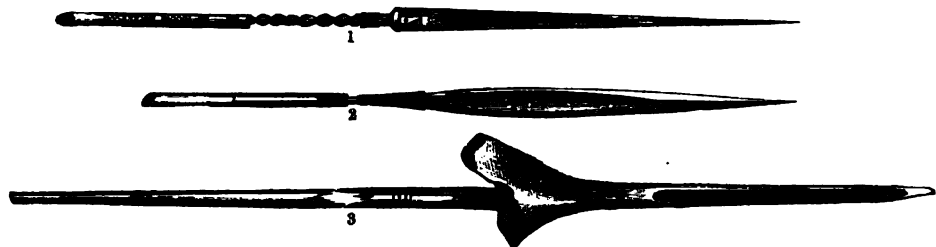
*June 16th.*—I too have fever, and Mesac has only brought in three small birds; a meagre result, of which he is much ashamed. The natives continue to avoid us, although I sent presents to their head man, inviting him to come, and requesting him to bring me some insects, for which he should be well paid.

*June 17th.*—This morning, at low tide, I betook myself to the source of the river, where a great bank of earth and mud, frequented by numerous large birds, lies uncovered. I succeeded in killing some ducks (*Tadorna radjha*), an ibis, and other less rare birds; and on my way to this spot I had the pleasure of beholding the approach of a canoe, which was sent by Beccari, and brought me some provisions. The natives brought me some small insects to-day, for which I paid three times their value. Mesac now has fever, and both Caccion and he are really ill; the former is totally unable to work, and cannot even stand upright. I took a long walk into the forest and killed some lovely birds, among them the painted *Pitta machlotii*, the *Gracula anais*, and a female of the *Seleucides*. The mate of the latter came every morning and chanted his long lugubrious notes from the top of a tall tree near my abode.

*June 20th.*—As the natives persisted in their refusal to sell me fish or fruit, I was forced to send my men to Sorong for provisions. I went



out shooting on the right bank, accompanied by a slave boy of the Orangtua, who acted as interpreter. We suddenly came upon a band of five or six natives, who were hunting a wild boar; they pointed out his footprints in the mud. These natives were armed with spears, and



1 and 2, Hunting arrows of bamboo. 3, Spear of cassowary bone.

bows and arrows, and they had with them ten meagre dogs, of all colours, acting as beaters. The natives evidently employ these animals in tracking game. The dogs were terribly afraid of me, and in no way could I succeed in making friends with them; in this respect they resembled their owners.

In my walk through the forest I came upon a little mound, protected by some dry boughs; on the top of it was a red cooking-pot. I asked the boy what the mound was, and he replied that it was a grave. He would not let me go very close, but told me that some one slept within it; then, turning round, and looking up to heaven, he made signs to me with his finger that the sleeper had gone up there. In the afternoon, as we were returning to the house, I heard the sound of a light blow on the trunk of a neighbouring tree. The boy looked round, and going a few steps, showed me an arrow sticking in the

bark. What did it mean? Was it an arrow that, having missed its mark, came close to me by chance? or was it aimed at me, and, missing me, had it hit the tree? I turned towards the house without finding this out; the boy begged me to quicken my pace, as if he feared a second arrow might be better aimed.

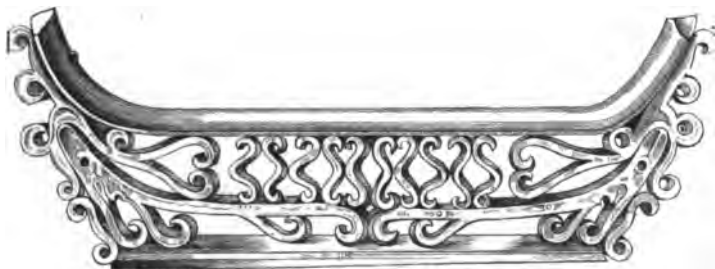
*June 21st.*—This morning I sent my men to Sorong, to recruit my store of rice; and this evening I received a letter from Beccari, telling me of the arrival there of a prau from Terate, by which we might send letters to Europe. I spent my morning in searching for insects among the old trunks of trees felled by the natives, and made an interesting collection. To-day a number of small parrots (*Coriphilus placens*) came and perched on a very lofty tree on the bank of the river where I bathe every morning. I succeeded in killing a couple of them. Their colouring is very vivid, and they are some of the most beautiful, as well as the smallest birds I have hitherto killed. I also shot another very beautiful bird (*Campephaga Sloetii*), with bright yellow body, lovely black neck, wings, and tail. It is of a very rare species, and the first of its kind we have seen.

*June 22nd.*—In the hope of being able to send letters to Europe, I obtained a small canoe, and resolved on going myself to Sorong. Mesac and Caccion being far from well, I took the boy only with me.

On arriving at Sorong I found Beccari in excellent health, but he informed me the prau had already gone, and thus my excursion resulted only in loss of time and fatigue, for on our re-

turn voyage the wind was unfavourable, and we had to row the whole way. Not being accustomed to handling oars, I was terribly tired. We reached the mouth of the river at low tide; there I saw a large bird (*Ardea Sumatrana*), and being eager to shoot it, I had to wade for half a mile through mud, sometimes up to my knees, and to do the same in returning to the canoe up the river; then we were caught in a heavy squall and shower, which soaked us to the skin. In short, I reached my house in a truly deplorable condition, and ten minutes afterwards I was attacked by fever.

*June 23rd.*—Being weakened by the fever, I remained in the house, and occupied myself in preparing some of the birds which I shot yesterday. Some natives arrived, bringing insects, and asking for tobacco. We were all ill to-day. I obtained from the natives two pieces of wood



Native pillow, carved wood.

cleverly wrought and carved, which they use as pillows. One of these represents two men resting on their stomachs upon a base, supporting a small board with their heads and arms. The two figures, which I may call Caryatides, are well carved, and display the type of the country. My legs were not strong enough to take me out of doors,

so I remained within, and prepared some of the birds which Mesac brought me. Towards evening seven elders of the village arrived, and asked to speak with me. After the usual salaams and greetings, the oldest of the men said to me, through the interpreter, "We have come to beg you to leave our village as soon as possible; you have brought us bad luck. Our sons began to die so soon as you came and looked at them. Five died in three days. It is you who have killed them with your eyes. Depart, or all the rest will perish." I was lying on what is called a bamboo bed, reduced to the last stage of exhaustion by fever of some days' standing; but on hearing myself thus accused of necromancy, I sat up and began to laugh heartily, or rather pretended to do so. When I saw my laughter had astonished the old men, I said to the interpreter, "Tell these people to look and see how the fever we have caught in their country has wasted me and my servants; and inform them, that if I had the power to kill others with merely looking at them, I certainly should have power to preserve myself and my companions from sickness. Let them rest assured that I neither wish nor am able to do them any harm; bid them go and tell that to their wives." When he had interpreted what I said, the good people seemed somewhat consoled, having apparently felt the truth of my words, and, after saluting me, they went away.

*June 27th.*—To-day no natives came. My interpreter tells me that the women have found a new path to the river in order to avoid passing near my house, so that my ill-omened glances

may not fall on them. Being still very weak I did not go into the forest to-day. This evening, however, I did go out, and, accompanied by the interpreter, suddenly entered the women's house. On seeing me they uttered shrill screams of terror, as if they had beheld a spectre. My interpreter shouted to them to keep quiet, and not be alarmed. Several women sprang to their feet, others remained crouching by their fireplaces, which were placed at intervals along the walls, and many, in their fright, hid their faces in their hands. By the glimmering light in the fireplaces I could discern, through the smoke, the strangest groups, on whose faces I read sheer consternation, caused by my coming. I, nevertheless, advanced, scattering tobacco and beads right and left, until I came to a poor mother who was sitting near the fire holding an infant on her knees. She got up, and, murmuring some words which I did not understand, presented the child to me. It was dead. A shudder ran through me, and I asked myself what the afflicted mother's action could mean? Did she want to tell me I had killed the child? I took the little corpse in my arms, kissed it, and restored it to its mother, together with a handful of beads, and another of tobacco. I had luckily now arrived at the far end of the house, and soon quitted that scene, whose smallest details will remain indelibly impressed on my mind so long as I live.

*June 28th.*—My health has suffered much, and the medicines I have are of no avail. Caccion is worse than I am, Mesac is somewhat better.

I wished to return to Sorong, but the state

we were in hindered us. We had only rice to eat on those days when we could not go out shooting, and, for invalids like ourselves, I do not think rice at all wholesome. I sent the Orangtua to seek for a man to go with him to Sorong in order to obtain fresh supplies, but he could not find one. He, however, being friendly with the natives, ate with them, although he could not obtain anything for us.

*June 29th.*—To-day, as I was a little better, I went to look for insects, and met some women, who ran away as if I were a mad dog. The men kept away from us. Mesac is very ill. Fortunately a canoe came from Sorong, and I succeeded in buying a little smoked fish. I also shot a gull, so for once we have something to season our rice withal.

*June 30th.*—The natives will not show themselves. I sent word to them that if they would give me a couple of men to take us to Sorong I would leave their village, and that they must help us to carry our baggage to the canoe. Considering how anxious they had been that I should go, it was a wonder to me that now, when they had a chance of getting rid of me, they did not accept it, but, indirectly, compelled me to stay longer than I wanted. I offered them tobacco, parangs, and handkerchiefs, but still they refused to accompany me.

*July 1st.*—We are in danger of dying here, not of fever only, but also of hunger. We have finished the rice, and our strength is so reduced that we cannot go out shooting, while the natives refuse to sell us anything. I sent

the Orangtua again to the chiefs of the village, to ask for men to take us to Sorong, our weakness being such that we could not manage the canoe.

*July 2nd.*—I resolved during the night that we would not die at Ramoi of either fever or hunger, and I sent to the chiefs to come and talk with me. The Orangtua succeeded this time, and returned, accompanied by three old men of the village, and a youth. When they came before me I collected the small amount of energy that was left in me, and, grasping my revolver, said that I would not die at Ramoi, that I wished to leave the place, that they must give me men to assist me in reaching Sorong; or, if they refused, not one of them should leave my house alive. I believe they understood better than if I had spoken to them through the interpreter, and they begged me to allow one of them to go and summon some boys to carry our baggage at once to the canoe, and also men to go with us. I allowed the youngest to leave the house, and waited. He soon returned with a number of young men, who loaded themselves with our baggage. They carried Caccion, who was unable to walk. I, always keeping my eyes about me, and my revolver handy, left the house last of all, when everything was ready on board the canoe.

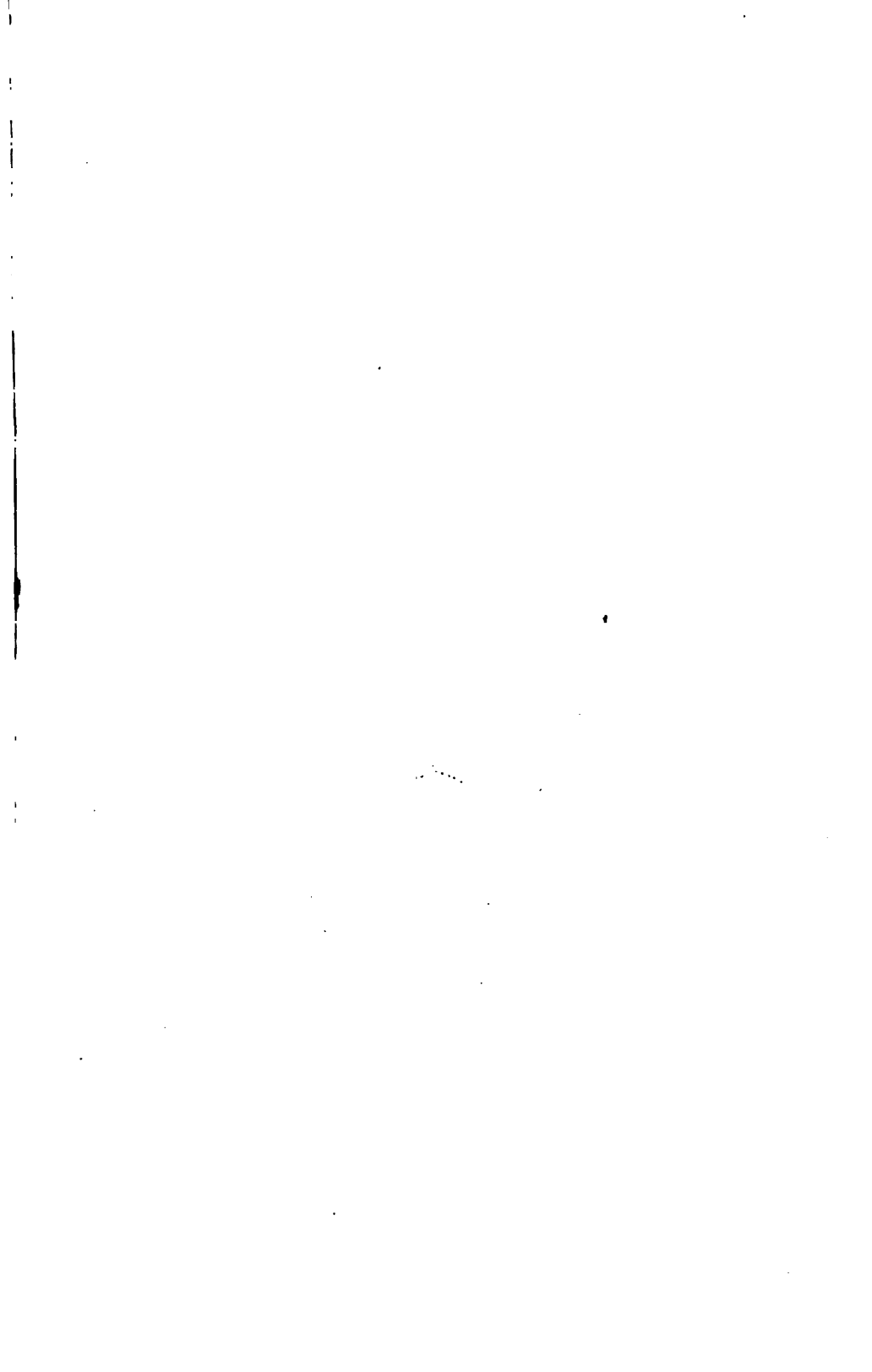
Before leaving I gave the natives some presents, and then bade adieu to Ramoi, where I had had three chances of death, from hunger, from fever, and from an arrow, and where I had acquired the reputation of a ghoul. I had collected some good specimens of birds and beautiful insects

there; but, however little my life is worth, it certainly is worth more than all those things put together. When we were about half a mile from the village, descending the river, I saw on the right bank a species of bird which I had never succeeded in shooting, and notwithstanding the weakness of my legs, I ordered the natives to bring the canoe to the bank, so that I might land and try to get the bird. The two men of Ramoi who were with me, opposed me in the most decided way, saying that was a place where no one could go, and that whoever ventured there was a dead man. The Orangtua, my interpreter, explained to me what they said, and added that it was but too true; and to persuade me, he said that Bernstein had died, only because, though warned of the danger, he had persisted in landing at this haunted spot. It is a fact that Bernstein died after being at Ramoi; but I refused to believe that it was merely because he had landed here; and I am persuaded that I should have died if I had remained many days at Ramoi—not of magic, but of fever and hunger combined. Indeed, I am not sure of surviving my experience now, even without going to this haunted spot, so reduced am I in strength. While we were arguing the point—I insisting upon landing, and they refusing to let me—the bird which was the cause of the argument flew away, and as I had then no reason for wishing to persevere, we continued our journey. About 11 a.m. we arrived at Sorong, more dead than alive. Seeing Beccari and getting into my own room put a little energy into me; but soon after I was



obliged to go to bed with chattering teeth, and the cold shivering of a bad attack of fever.

Sorong is almost deserted ; all the able-bodied men and lads are gone, they tell us, to hunt for human heads. We found Beccari, however, he having been unable to procure men to accompany him in his proposed excursions ; which was fortunate for me, for he has had experience in fevers of this nature, and gave me tremendous doses of quinine, which killed the fever, but also made me completely deaf. I am bewildered, and seem to be in another world.





**FANDUHL.**

*Vol. I., p. 60.*

## CHAPTER V.

The Papuans of Dorey—The Raja of Salwattee—Sennagi Braus—A comfortless voyage—Black cockatoos—I become dropsical—I land and see a family of Alfuros—On the 24th July I kill my first bird of paradise—I am suddenly cured of dropsy—An adventure with a hornbill—Troubles by sea—Mansinam—The missionary there, his success, and his prospects—Andai—We take up our abode there—Mr. Van Hasselt's visit—A groundless accusation against us—The forest—My Papuan guide—I catechize him, with odd results.

SOME boats called cora-coras, large if compared with canoes, from Dorey, are in the roadstead. The people belonging to them have quite a distinct physiognomy, with good complexions, and are strongly built. They often come to visit us, and sell us quantities of wooden images, generally wrapped in cloth, and representing a man whose head is very large in proportion to his body. They have also sold us some knife-handles, made by themselves out of stag's horn, and carved, sometimes with skill and in good taste.

*July 4th.*—Beccari is treating with one of the sennagi of Dorey to take us to his country; and the hope that change of climate may restore me to health makes me very anxious that he should succeed in persuading him to undertake the job. Although I have not been attacked by fever to-day I am forced to keep my bed.

*July 7th.*—I am a little better, and able to leave the house. The bargain with Sennagi Braus has been concluded. The passage-money agreed upon was paid in advance, and our departure in two or three days arranged. We are beginning to get our baggage ready. The Raja



Karwari, or god.



Amulet, or god.

of Salwattee has paid us a visit, and given us his own account of his expedition to the country of Onin. He denies having killed anybody, but admits that he captured some slaves. Beccari happened to be away at Ramoi when some heads, the fruit of this expedition, were brought to us. The raja is a shameless beggar, asking for everything he sees, and he is not averse to theft. He

narrowly escaped paying dearly for the indulgence of this propensity, for it was by the merest chance that I detected him in the act of appropriating some pieces of cyanide of potassium, thinking that they were lumps of sugar.

*July 8th.*—The Sennagi Braus is going to a neighbouring island to marry a very pretty girl, who has often brought me insects. She is one of the most comely damsels I have hitherto seen, and if I were she, I would not marry the sennagi, who is an old and ugly personage. Our baggage is all ready, and we are only awaiting the return of the fortunate Adonis to depart in the direction of Dorey. There we shall be close to that place which, according to Wallace, is the country of the “rare bird of paradise.” The sennagi returned late in the evening, and says he will take our baggage on board to-morrow. Malicious rumour in this country hints that he has found some obstacles in the way of his matrimonial designs. Some more cora-coras have come from Ghebi; the crews are Malay and have coarse faces and ill-shaped bodies. How great is the contrast they present to the Papuans of Dorey! The latter have something in them like intelligence, and inspire us with confidence, while towards the others we feel only mistrust.

*July 9th.*—To-day a portion of our baggage was shipped. The cora-cora is partly laden with fresh sago, which emits a smell not precisely so odoriferous as that of the rose, and it is so overcrowded with passengers and merchandise that we can foresee what our voyage will be. There is a little cabin allotted to us, if we may call

by that name a small den in which one can hardly sit upright.

The sennagi wanted to return to the island where dwells the mistress of his heart, and therefore put off our departure.

*July 12th.*—The sennagi, not having succeeded in obtaining the hand of the young lady, persisted in detaining us here, still hoping to succeed in softening the hard-hearted beauty. For my part, I am very glad he did not succeed, for she is much too pretty for him.

We have had some further experience of the Papuans of Dorey during the last three days. By day they importune us with their visits, at night with their gongs and singing. Beccari lost his temper last night, and then things looked serious. At one time I thought it would be necessary to have recourse to arms, but fortunately the Papuans thought it safer to keep quiet.

Besides the noise made by the Papuans of Dorey, we are kept awake all night by certain noisy rites of the natives of the island, who are preparing for a great festival on the occasion of the circumcision of some children. They prefer sleeping all day long, and therefore everything is done by night.

*July 13th.*—To-day some natives of Dorey came, and, as usual, quarrels arose between them and our people; the consequence was that one of the Papuans said, "When you white men come to Dorey, we black men will kill you all." This, no one can deny, was a pleasant prospect.

The sennagi appears very unfortunate in his

love affair; he has not yet returned from the island where his adored one lives.

To-day, for the first time, I saw some black cockatoos (*Microglossum aterrimum*) in the island, and killed two of them.

*July 15th.*—It was decided at last that we should sail to-day. The sennagi told us of this early. He is in a bad humour, because he has failed to obtain the pretty wife he wanted: To tell the truth, I am highly pleased that he has not succeeded. With the greatest alacrity we made our final preparations for departure, and a few articles of baggage which had not yet been shipped were carried on board. The last things removed from the dry land were the guns, and when they went it was a sign that we were really off. A crowd of women and children invaded the house to bid us farewell—or more probably to see whether we had left anything in our late quarters. As we did not take all our boxes with us, we left Ishmael, one of our men, to look after them; but we also confided them to the care of the Sennagi Kanass, who was very proud of our esteeming him so honest that we would entrust our possessions to him, and strutted up and down the verandah full of self-importance. At the moment of our departure he came to us, and after saluting us in the usual Mussulman style, begged us to shake hands with him in “Ingrish” fashion. At half-past 10 a.m. we were all on board. The gongs began their diabolical music, and our flags fluttered in the breeze. By eleven the anchor was weighed, and the stroke of the oars told us we had left Sorong.



Our cora-cora is an old craft, and leaks in so many places that it is necessary to bale her out every two hours. She has a rudder on each side, and is decked with thin planks. The after-deck is covered in with a roof made of atap, or palm-leaves closely joined, and secured with strips of bamboo; it is supported by a framework made of the stems of very small trees. This is so strong that it bears the weight of men walking on it, and serves as their bed at night.

The interior of the cabin is divided into two parts by means of some boxes, large and small, belonging to the sennagi, who occupies one portion with his two wives and a child, while Beccari and I are accommodated in the other. There is a cook's galley, consisting merely of a box of ashes, among which are some stones. This serves the purpose of an oven. We had the advantage of having this commodious kitchen opposite to the opening which served us as a door; and when we had the wind astern, our cabin was always full of smoke. The sago in the hold emitted a horrible stench. The two steersmen stood only one pace from our door, and we could do nothing without their seeing us. They were immoderately curious, and to the vice of curiosity they added that of greediness. As we were dining and supping to-day they looked as if they were counting the mouthfuls we ate, and they picked up and gnawed the bones that we threw away. A fire is kept burning all day, although the temperature is up to 90° Fahrenheit.

*July 21st.*—Six days have passed since we left

Sorong, and we are only half way. The wind helps us very little, and our Papuans are too lazy to row. Besides, they land every day for water, or to cook their food; and as they do not care to live only on sago and rice, they always waste a great deal of time in fishing and hunting for crabs among the rocks. We touched at Dorey Cucil, Dorey Um, Bari, and Hass, small villages inhabited by a mixed race, in which, however, the Malay element predominates, and we arrived to-day off Amsterdam Island, where our sailors landed.

I also went on shore, but found very few birds, with the exception of the white cockatoo, which abounded; and the only beautiful one I succeeded in killing was an exceedingly handsome kingfisher (*Sauroptis albicilla*). As I have become dropsical of late, my walk tired me very much. Dropsy harasses me much in New Guinea, the country of my dreams. If I press my legs with my fingers, a depression remains for at least a quarter of an hour; if I touch any other part of my body, my skin yields over a large surface as if there were a layer of water between it and my flesh. The fever, however, has ceased to torment me; but I find it hard to decide which is the worse of the two, fever or dropsy.

July 23rd.—We anchored to-day at a point on the coast of Amberbaki. Mesac and Caccion are ill with fever. I landed with one of the Papuans, and went into the forest for a long time. It is level, and tolerably free from creepers, and therefore we were not over-fatigued by our walk. I made a long tour very slowly, and feeling leaden-

footed. I had not the good luck to kill any pretty birds; but I am content with the results of my walk, because I met a family of real Alfuros. There were two men, two women, and several children. They showed no fear of me, and I went quite near to them. They were standing by a lofty tree, under a little roof made of branches, whose leaves are still green, and which is therefore a recent and temporary erection. The men were tall, and their skins very black. The women, whose skins were perhaps still blacker, had engaging faces; they were, I may say, even pretty, notwithstanding their black colour. Their features were by no means defective. They had not long, but on the contrary, rather round faces. They appeared stout and well fed, and I observed that their breasts were beautifully shaped and rounded. Their eyes were remarkably fine. Neither men nor women wore any ornaments, and they had sufficient covering to justify me in saying that they were not quite naked. Their hair was curly and unkempt. I made them some presents, which they accepted without showing any signs of interest. They are of a type sufficiently resembling that of the people of Dorey to be recognized as kin to the latter.

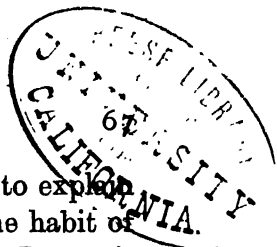
*July 24th.*—At last, to-day, I have killed my first bird of paradise. While following a bird called the *Pomatorhinus Isidorii*, I met with this lovely species, and succeeded in shooting a most beautiful male. My excitement was so great that when I saw it fall I ran to secure it, forgetting the state of my legs, though a moment before I had hardly been able to drag them along.

## *A Sudden Cure.*

I have remarked, without being able to explain the fact, that the *Pomatorhinus* is in the habit of following birds of paradise. At Ramoi I saw it following the *Cicinnurus* and the *Seleucides*; to-day it was following the Papuan or minor bird of paradise. Perhaps it is attracted by the bright colours of the latter. I should think this was the case, if I had only seen it following the males; but as I have often seen it following the females of the above-named species, there must be some other reason for the habit.

*July 25th.*—To-day we touched at a little village on the coast of Amberbaki. Some canoes came alongside. A youthful sportsman was in one of these, who had killed two beautiful specimens of the male bird of Paradisea minor with his gun. These he sold to me, flesh and all, for a dollar apiece. He is also a taxidermist, and he showed me some fairly well-prepared skins, which he meant to sell to merchants at Terate and Macassar.

*July 27th.*—Last night the dropsy had so much increased that I thought myself quite past recovery. Not only was my body swelled out and full of water, but also my face, so that I could scarcely open my eyes. I wished Beccari good-night, adding that in the morning he would find me dead and burst open. My skin was so distended that I thought it must burst. Things, however, do not always turn out as we expect; in the night I was seized with violent fever, and during the reaction I perspired to an extent which, if described, would seem incredible. The result is, that I am reduced this morning to the condition of a skeleton covered with loose



skin. Looking at my arms and legs, and then at my face in the looking-glass, I am almost afraid of myself. I was accustomed to see my body so puffed out, owing to the water between my skin and my flesh, that I began to think I was really fat. Now to see myself reduced to a heap of bones, covered with a shrivelled skin, astonishes me considerably; but neither Beccari nor I could refrain from laughing at the metamorphosis.

All our men have the fever now.

*July 28th.*—For many days there has been a succession of quarrels between our men and the insolent Papuans. To-day I heard Mesac, who was lying sick, crying out that a Papuan was kicking him. I went outside the cabin to ascertain the cause of the dispute, and when I heard what it was, I reproved the Papuan for his bad behaviour to Mesac. His reply was, "When you white men come to our country, we will kill you all"—the same threat which was uttered at Sorong.

This did not please me, and I asked the savage if he would repeat his words, which he did, probably thinking me weakened by my illness, and he also aggravated their meaning by a derisive smile. Anger gave me strength; I seized him by the throat, and, before he had time to struggle, threw him headlong into the sea. The wind being light, he was soon able to regain the ship by swimming; then, mad with rage, he seized a bamboo, probably with the intention of using it on me. But Beccari, who had seen the whole affair, was at hand to give me my revolver, with which

I brought the native to his senses, making him throw down his bamboo, and compelling his companions, who seemed disposed to take his part, to row. They had a wholesome dread of the revolver, and for the remainder of that day they were as quiet as lambs.

*July 31st.*—The lesson given to the Papuans the day before yesterday has done them good; yesterday and to-day they were much more submissive than usual. The sennagi, their chief and captain, has very little authority over them; and although he appears to take our part, I believe he is more in accord with them than with us. We anchored to-day in a small bay, being forced by a strong contrary wind to lie-to. It rained in torrents all night long, and a good part of the morning also. When it stopped raining I went on shore in a canoe we had picked up during the night, and which had travelled in our company. I do not know how it happened, but shortly before reaching the shore, I found myself in the water, with my gun, revolver, and cartridges. I succeeded, however, in saving everything, and suffered no damage, except an impromptu bath and the trouble of drying and cleaning my arms. I wandered very slowly through the forest for some hours. Many of the trees had fruit on them, and the ground was covered with ripe fruit. I saw some wild pigs, and small kangaroos; the latter were feeding on the fruit, but I did not succeed in killing any. Beccari's dog—I had taken him with me—is a very independent animal, he goes just wherever he thinks fit, and he

put the game to flight before I could take aim. I killed only a few birds, and those of little interest. While I was returning on board I saw a buceros (hornbill) on the top of a lofty tree, fired at, and hit him. Down he fell from a height of between sixty and eighty feet. He was not dead, but fell beak downwards. I saw he was coming down on me, and I tried to get out of the way; I was, however, too late, and he struck me on the left arm with such force that the point of his beak pierced my sleeve, and penetrated about an inch into my arm. This curious incident had no ill result. At 3 p.m. we resumed our voyage. As usual, there is but little wind, and the natives refuse to row; if it goes on like this, our voyage will last until the Greek kalends.

*August 2nd.*—The natives on board our coracora continue to be insolent, and to quarrel with our servants. They sleep all night, and want to remain on shore all day to fish, and cook their food, and have a good time of it. Time has no value to them; it is all the same to them whether they pass it here or anywhere else; everything goes well with them so long as they eat and are merry. As, owing to them, the voyage is being prolonged immoderately, we tried in every way to make them stick to their work, and forbade them to go on shore. But they openly laughed at our orders, and being first-rate swimmers, no sooner did we anchor anywhere, than, when we had gone for a walk a short distance from the coast, they jumped into the sea, swam ashore, and remained absent

until evening. To-day, being determined to enforce obedience, we threatened to fire on any man who jumped into the sea, and put two of our men on guard, one at the stern, the other at the bows, with orders to fire on the first who should disobey. The natives, believing these orders would be really carried out, did not attempt to leave the vessel.

We have arrived at last at the island of Mansinam, opposite Dorey. A populous village is in front of us, built on piles in the sea. The long, low houses are of curious shape, like that of boats bottom uppermost. Behind the village lies a tract of sandy beach, whence a pretty slope leads up to the civilized portion of the island, where a Dutch missionary lives.

Mr. Van Hasselt has been nine years in the island, and seems perfectly acclimatized. His wife, a Prussian, is a handsome and gracious lady. They received us courteously, and offered us their hospitality. They have a very nice house, with all the comforts that can be desired, a small library, a church which serves also as a school, and a garden containing fruit and cocoa-nut trees; they have also a herd of cows. A number of children, mostly puny, sickly, and deformed, are collected here and there by the missionary; otherwise they would probably die of the neglect with which they are treated by their parents. These children are destined to form a nucleus of converts to Christianity. It appears, however, that they make very little progress, and are by no means quick at learning either religion, or reading and writing. It was



like a dream, too good for reality, to sleep in comfortable beds, and sit at a well-spread table, after our sojourn on board the *cora-cora*. Mr. Van Hasselt told us there is another station in charge of a missionary, on the mainland, at no great distance. The village is called Andai, and it is inhabited by people from the mountains, who came down and established themselves there when the mission was founded. So far as we could learn, this place was not far from the gate of the land which has been before my mind's eye ever since I left Italy, the land of the "rare bird of paradise" of Wallace. We resolved to go to Andai to-morrow, and ascertain whether we can take up our abode there.

*August 5th.*—We went to Andai to-day, in a canoe belonging to the missionaries, and at high tide came to a flight of steps almost in front of the missionaries' house. We saw the lofty peaks of Mount Arfak, and also a plain at the foot of the mountains where all the trees appeared to be dead; and we were told that, years ago, an earthquake took place, the sea covered the whole plain, and killed all the trees. We saw some enormous fissures in the sides of the mountains, which we were told were also results of the same earthquake. We landed and proceeded to the house of the missionary, which was about a hundred yards from the beach. The place presented a charming appearance; the fruit-trees, and a long hedge of hibiscus, planted on both sides, made it really like a garden. The large hibiscus flowers were most beautiful, and their bright colours attracted a number of pretty butterflies, which flew in front

of us. All the natives we met were adorned with these flowers.

On our arrival at the mission house, we were cordially received by Mr. Woelders, who, when we told him our plans, kindly promised to assist us in every way, and offered us his own house until we could get one built, or assigned to us by the natives. This he promised to exert all his influence to secure.

*August 8th.*—Going early to the river this morning, I managed to shoot four fine ducks. During my walk in the forest, which lasted all day, I heard several birds of paradise, but I did not succeed in seeing any full-grown cocks. The natives, who promised yesterday to build us a house, declare to-day that they will do nothing of the kind.

The mission-house, with all its dependencies, is situated in a plain at the foot of a range of small hills. Part of the plain is cultivated by the missionaries, and part by the natives. The native village is situated on the left bank, as we ascend the river. On the right bank, in the midst of plantations of bananas, yams, sugar-cane, and papaia, there are some small houses, inhabited by people from Dorey, who have settled here, while in the village itself the people come from Mount Arfak. The missionaries have endeavoured to grow rice behind their house, but they do not appear to have succeeded. The *personnel* of the mission appears to consist of children of both sexes, in the same condition as those we described at Mansinam. They pray and study a good deal, but it appears they learn very little. They read well from the board in the

school, but they do not recognize the letters of the alphabet if they see them elsewhere. The missionary confessed that they profited but little by his endeavours. Although the natives go to church on Sunday, they do not embrace the faith preached to them, and no real converts are made by the missionaries. It appears that after many years' labour among them, one old woman only was converted to Christianity; but she, poor thing, was dead, so that I had not the felicity of beholding this phenomenon. I have, however, no intention of denying that the missionaries do good; for in the first place, they save many children from an almost certain death; and they have, I may say, almost tamed these savages, who were believed until recently to be cannibals.

*August 10th.*—Although weakened by fever, which attacked me yesterday, I went out shooting alone, and I lost my way in the forest, where I wandered about for several hours, not knowing where I was. I found the Papuan bird of paradise in abundance; and hiding myself in some bushes, I watched five full-grown cocks, which were fighting, and following one another from bough to bough, sometimes flying away, sometimes returning to the attack. If one of them were left alone, he began to flap his wings and the long yellow feathers on his sides. It seemed to me that he thus displayed his beauty to attract and provoke the others. I also saw the hen birds, for whom this parade of valour and beauty was of course intended. At last I put an end to their felicity with my gun, and took home with me a beautiful cock, a hen, and two young

birds of this exquisite species. It is a pity that nature, having bestowed such lovely plumage on these birds, has not endowed them with a less disagreeable voice, for their notes certainly cannot be called harmonious.

I made a great round before I reached home, having to resort first to the sea, and then to the river, in order to find my way. I came unawares within a few paces of a huge crocodile. He did not see me at first; probably he was asleep on the bank. We perceived one another, I think, at the same moment, for as I raised my gun he plunged into the water and disappeared. A native house, on a little hill on the river bank, is promised us for Monday. It is old, small, and built on piles; but as we cannot get a better, we must put up with it.

*August 11th.*—Being Sunday, we rested, and I went to church. Those who assembled to hear the Word of God were few in the morning, and fewer still in the evening. I observed that many slept, while the others were inattentive. I was told that all the Papuans who came to church, and stayed until the end of the service, receive a little sago from the missionary; besides this they are people who work for him; he gives employment only to those who attend his church. As native labour is paid in sago or other articles, the natives are obliged to go to church on Sunday in order to receive their pay, otherwise I believe the sacred edifice would be quite deserted.

The Papuans are a very lazy people, and only too glad to find any pretext for idleness. As it was very important to us to have our house

ready by to-morrow, we worked a part of the day unknown to the missionary; and the natives who refused to help us, saying it was Sunday, agreed to do so readily enough when we offered them double pay.

*August 12th.*—This morning, our house being ready to receive our baggage, some men, women, and children soon carried it up, and were paid for their labour with *mani-mani*, the native word for beads. We are much pleased to be in a house we can call our own; but it is a drawback that, not having been able to go out shooting to-day, we have had nothing to eat except boiled rice. With the aid of the missionary, we endeavoured to make an agreement with some of the men from the mountains, to take us for an excursion to a village called Hatam. The missionary tried to dissuade me from my intention of venturing alone among a people who until lately were believed to be cannibals; I, however, mean to go there, and also to the mountains where the beautiful rare birds of paradise dwell. I have become so thin that I certainly shall not excite the appetite of the mountaineers, even if they should prove to be cannibals; and besides, the Corano or chief of Hatam is a friend of the missionary, and will hold me in respect.

To-day two Papuan birds of paradise came and settled on a tree near our house; it is now 10 p.m., and I still hear them from my window. Perhaps their sleep has been disturbed by an enemy.

*August 13th.*—Last night from my bed I could count a number of stars through the holes in the roof of my room. These holes I must stop up

with some caulking stuff made of the leaves of the pandanus, which I bought from the natives. My two men, Mesac and Caccion, are very ill; Caccion's legs are paralyzed, and he cannot stand.

*August 14th.*—I was in the forest from eight until twelve, accompanied by a young Papuan, who insisted on coming, almost in spite of me. I was thus able to go a long distance without being afraid of losing my way. I found a fine specimen of the tanysiptera, and a beautiful bird (*Eupetes coerulescens*), blue, with a white throat, which I saw for the first time. It runs along the ground, and does not appear to perch on the trees. I killed a pair of beautiful pigeons with one shot (*Gymnophaps Albertisii*, *n. gen. et n. sp.*). The form of their beaks, the nostrils surrounded by a circle of the brightest scarlet, and a large bare space round the eyes of the same brilliant colour, give these birds a most curious appearance. The back is generally ash-coloured, speckled with black at the ends of the feathers. I also saw some small kangaroos, but did not succeed in shooting any of them.

*August 17th.*—The sun did not appear, and owing to the rain we were unable to go into the forest. With the missionary from Dorey came a former pupil of the mission, named David, who was once a slave of the Sultan of Tidor; and it seems that he will consent to accompany us to the mountains and act as our interpreter. To-day we had a long conversation about our expedition with the head man of the village. The difficulties grow more and more serious; the worst of them

is the doubt of our getting men to carry our luggage, as the natives on the coast are in great fear of the tribes of the interior.

*August 23rd.*—I have been only moderately successful in my shooting for the last few days, but on the whole I ought to be contented, for I have increased my collection by several beautiful birds, and some very rare specimens of insects. I may specially mention cetonides, and among them the beautiful *Ischiopsopha bifasciata* (double-striped), remarkable for its two black stripes on vivid green, which I found on the fruit of the papaw tree. I have also found the *Lomaptera Beccarii*, the *L. Albertisii*, the *L. Xanthopyga*, the *L. Macrophylla*—all very fine, and new to me—as well as other kinds already described.

We persevered in our efforts to arrange an excursion to the mountains, and especially to Hatam. Beccari has also been attacked by fever, Caccion is still unable to stand, and Mesac, too, is crippled with sciatica. The only one who is well now is David, Beccari's servant and our cook.

*August 24th.*—Mr. Van Hasselt came to-day from Mansinam, and informed us that small-pox having broken out among the inhabitants of that island, the natives believe we have spread the germs of that malady in the air, in revenge for the bad conduct of the men on board the cora-cora which brought us from Sorong. So we again labour under the imputation of sorcery.

The natives of Mansinam believe that poison mingles with the air, and we were told that the natives on the left bank once tried to kill the missionaries with the smoke of certain herbs,

carried by the wind in the direction of the mission-house. Beccari, is still very unwell, and my limbs are swelling.

*August 25th.*—To-day being Sunday, I remained at home, and to pass away the hours of idleness I did some jeweller's work. It is lucky for me the law of the mark on gold does not exist here, for I made free use of brass in my manufactures. As the people delight in wearing ornaments, insects and animals are easily obtained in exchange for them. I made several rings, bracelets, ear-rings, and necklaces—the first of metal, the others of beads, which they call mani-mani, and which they prefer in blue and white. They wear ornaments of their own manufacture, made of shells and the teeth of the wild boar; they also wear silver bracelets, which they make by melting down the money (generally dollars), that they receive in payment from time to time. They have learnt to melt beads, and when they have reduced a quantity of them to a state of fusion, they make them into ear-rings, in which they display some idea of art. A few of them work in iron, and make large knives of a peculiar form. This knife is called in Malay, "parang," and is widest towards the point; at the handle it is very narrow, so that, all the weight being at the end, it inflicts a terrible wound; and they say a well-aimed stroke of a parang will take a man's head clean off his shoulders. The natives are always armed with this knife, which they consider indispensable to their equipment; they also carry spears, and bow and arrows. They ornament their bows with beads and bright-coloured pieces



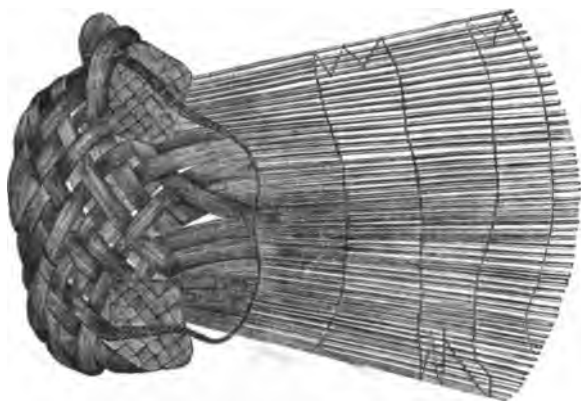
of cloth, and their spears with cassowary feathers. Although they are so fond of adorning themselves, they pay little attention to the cleanliness of their persons. Both men and women wear only a waist-cloth; and seen at first from behind, they appear to be in a complete state of nudity. Some of them, however, especially at Andai, have begun to wear the sarong, a piece of cloth fastened round the loins and reaching to the knees. On Sunday, instead of washing, they anoint their bodies with cocoa-nut oil, which emits an odour very trying to unaccustomed noses; they then bedeck themselves with flowers, especially those of the hibiscus.

To-day I took into my service this same David, who is to accompany me as interpreter. He is a strange individual. He has already presented himself several times, saying he would remain, but on every occasion took himself off again. To-day I paid him in advance, in order to have a hold on him, but he disappeared shortly afterwards, and I do not know when he means to return. Yesterday I had another attack of fever.

*August 29th.*—I went again to the forest, accompanied by the young Papuan whom I have previously mentioned. As we sat chatting under a tree, I asked him where people went when they died? He replied that he did not know. I asked him what the missionary told them about it at school? He said he told them the good went up, and the wicked down—and he pointed first to the sky and then to the ground. I asked him whether he believed this? He said he did not

know, and asked me whether the missionary told the white man that if he were good he would go up, and if bad, down? I asked him whether the missionary had not told him that Jesus Christ had so said? He replied that the missionary told him this; but how was he to know whether he spoke the truth or not? He added: "Since Christ has spoken to white men, why does He not come Himself and speak to black men?" I asked him what difference it made whether He came or not, since He sent people to say what He wished in His stead? The lad answered, "If He wanted us, He ought to have come Himself. I will be good; and if, when I am dead, He wants to send me down, I shall ask Him why He did not come Himself to speak to black men, since we are not bound to believe white men."

At this point I closed the conversation. I had not sufficient apostolic zeal to endeavour to confirm this half-converted savage in the faith.

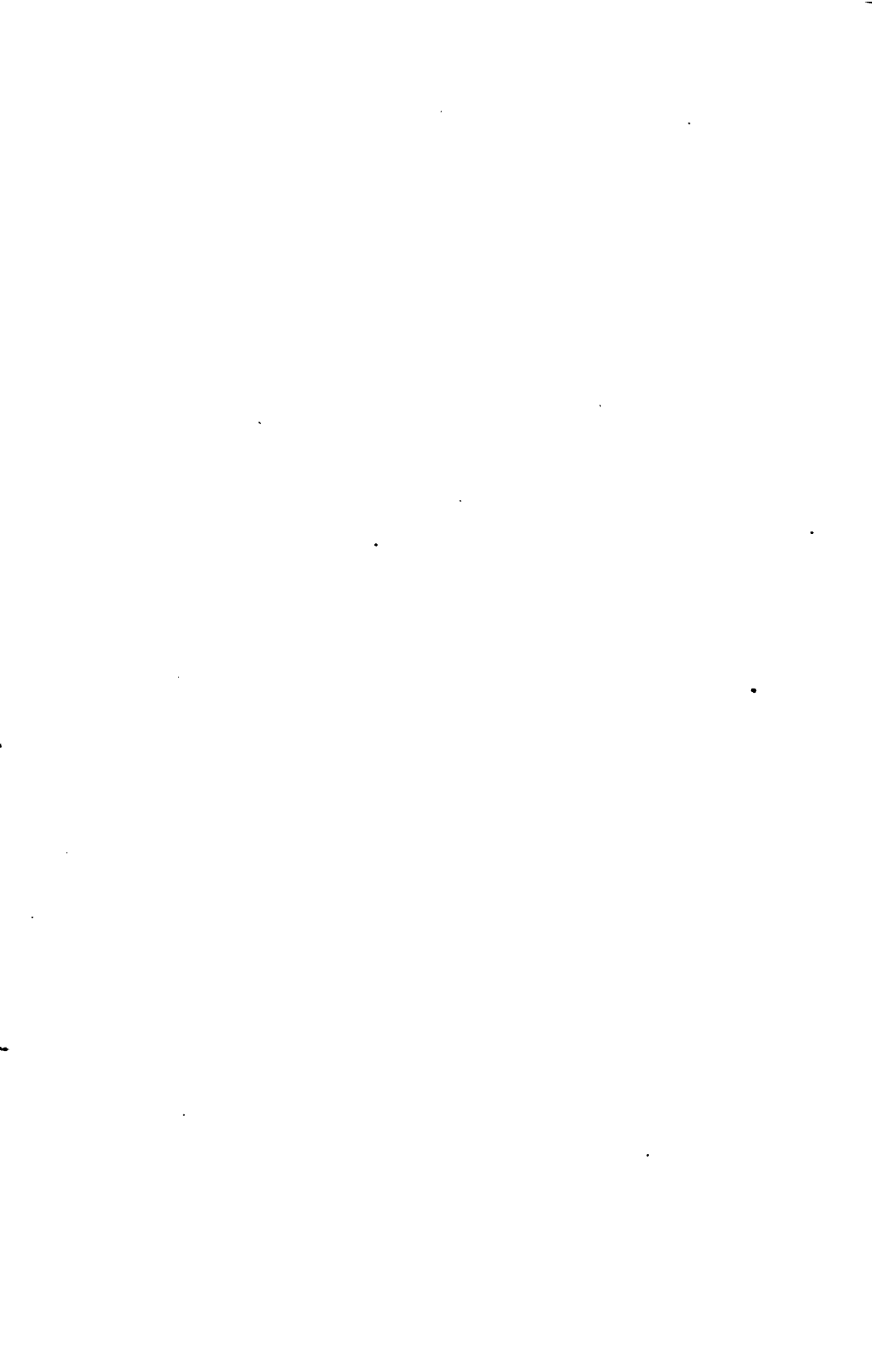


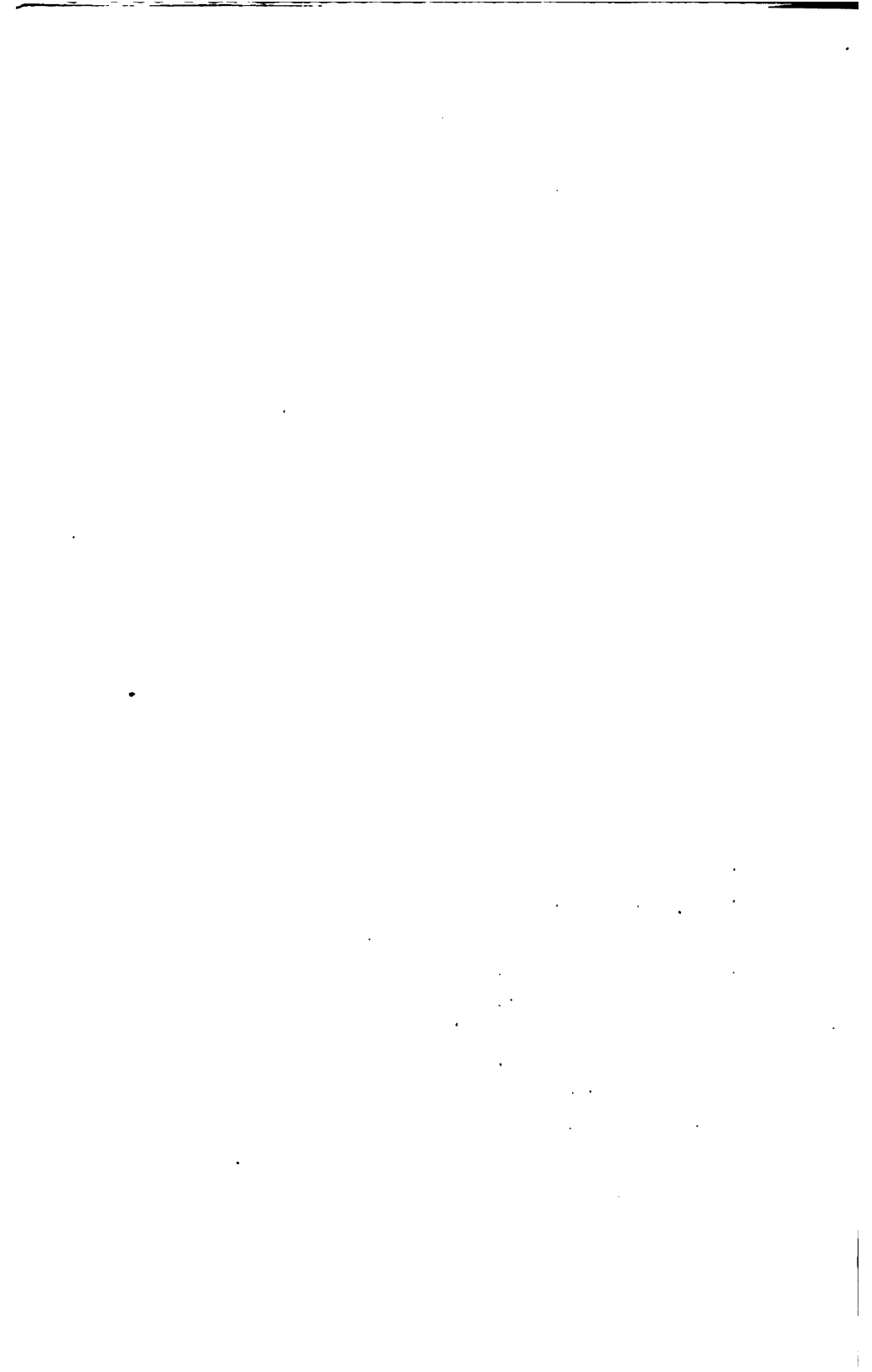
Used to wash the Sago.

## CHAPTER VI.

Our expedition to Hatam is arranged—Four out of six bearers present themselves—Substitutes—We leave Andai—The forest again—Birds of paradise—A suddenly invaded solitude—A friendly tribe, and hospitable treatment—Putat—A little science, which goes a very long way—Once more on the march—Putat Mountain—A splendid panorama—Short commons—A view of the Arfak Mountains—The path—Mountain scenery—Tree-ferns and rhododendron—Shrubs—Hatam—The Corano—A great day for me—Remorse and exultation—Albinos—A theory—I settle down for a while.

*September 3rd.*—At last the arrangements for our expedition to Hatam are made. I have found six men who consent to carry our baggage, which will have to be greatly restricted in quantity. There was, as usual, a great deal of talking about the terms, but finally all was settled. I had to pay half the stipulated sum in advance; and they left me six nokins, or network bags, in order that the weight might be evenly divided among the men. We are to set off early to-morrow morning. I worked hard to get the baggage prepared, and now all is in readiness. I shall be truly vexed if the men fail to keep their word this time. I am taking with me a supply of rice for fifteen days, a bottle of brandy, a little salt, two jars of spirits of wine for preserving skins, and as much arsenical soap, cotton-wool, and







Vincent Brooks, Day & Son, Ill.

LOPHORHINA SUPERBA









- 1—3. Network-bags, or nokins—Arfak, Fly River, Hall Sound, and Moatta.  
 4. Grass bag—Fly River.  
 5, 6. Cassowary feathers headdresses—Moatta, Fly River, and Hall Sound.  
 7, 8. " " necklaces " " "  
 9. Paradise bird headdress—Fly River.  
 10, 11. Straw made belts—Moatta.  
 12. Cormorant's feathers headdress—Fly River.  
 13. Breastplate, adorned with feathers and seeds—Fly River.

powder and shot, as I can carry, besides beads and cloth for presents or barter.

*September 4th.*—Four only of the men I bargained with yesterday arrived, and we lost some time in replacing the deserters. At half-past seven I left my little house at Andai, and, after crossing the river in a canoe, we were soon in the forest. One of my bearers passed near his house, and took with him his wife, and a daughter seven or eight years old. The wife is a strong woman, and, although *enceinte*, I think she will be able to keep pace with us, notwithstanding that she was heavily loaded—certainly more heavily than her husband.

I was not mistaken; this woman has never lagged behind the others all day. She is in traveling trim; that is to say, she has reduced to the smallest possible proportions the band of cloth which, as I have already said, is always worn very small by these people. My men are armed with bows, arrows, spears, and parangs. The woman, too, carries a spear, which she uses as a staff. Having walked over the plain for an hour and a half, we arrived at the foot of a steep hill, and then began to ascend rapidly by a rough path. We went along in single file, and in silence, our men being too heavily laden to chatter. The forest was dense, the air moist and refreshing; all was silence, and I, being slightly in advance of my companions, could hear them panting under their loads. No songs of birds enlivened us, only at long intervals we occasionally heard the cooing of a pigeon and the hoarse cry of a megapodio or telegallus. In

order to travel as lightly laden as possible, I had brought no food with me, trusting to Providence—and not in vain, for I succeeded in shooting a fine telegallus as we were going along. At length, after climbing for about half an hour, we reached an elevated plain, which we traversed for another hour; then we mounted again by a rugged path up to a little glen, where a streamlet of the clearest water was running over a gravel bottom. Here we rested for a short time, and some sago biscuits were distributed among the men, every one looking after his own share. They put their sago into the running water, and ate it when it was well soaked. It was the time of day when butterflies are mostly seen; and along the wet sandy banks of the stream, under the shadow of lofty trees, were myriads, whose beauty and endless variety of form excited my admiration.

Resuming our journey, we had several ascents and descents to make; but we gradually gained in altitude, and there was already a slight but perceptible change in the vegetation; the trees were smaller, and more scanty than in the plains. We heard or saw several birds of paradise (*Parad. minor*), but, on the whole, birds were scarce. I shot a couple of hooded pigeons, which ensured me a good dinner and supper. Towards 4 p.m. I consulted the aneroid barometer, and found that we had reached a height of 1500 feet above the sea, of which I now and then caught a glimpse. Then we began to descend, and soon found ourselves in the dry bed of a former stream, so far as I could judge from the nature of the soil and the peculiar vegetation. A little farther on we heard

the gurgling of water among rocks, stones, and boulders ; but when we came to the spot we found very little water.

The channel is broad, and in the rainy season the stream must become a real river. The mountain, whose foot forms one bank of the stream, is steep, and in some places precipitous.

Since we left the last house in Andai behind us, and entered the forests, we had not met a living soul ; but when—being somewhat in advance of my fellow-travellers—I stepped forth from among some reeds which grew in the bed of the stream, I met a woman face to face. She at once turned and fled, as if she had seen the Evil One in person. Looking in the direction she had taken, I saw some people coming down from the mountain by the steepest of paths—if a track along which they could only go by using both hands and feet, may be so called. Suddenly I heard the sound of many voices, coming, it seemed to me, from behind me, and turning, I beheld a crowd of natives, who made their appearance from among the reeds, or from behind the rocks and boulders in the bed of the stream, as if by magic. They were of both sexes ; the men were armed with bows, arrows, parangs, and spears, and several of the women also carried bows and spears. In one minute, in a place which I believed to be a perfect solitude, I found myself surrounded by a large crowd of timid but curious people. Some of the more courageous drew near me, while the remainder, and especially the women, formed themselves into small groups, of three or four, on the top of the rocks. The bed of the stream

behind them assumed a most animated appearance, and afforded many subjects well worthy of the pencil of an artist. I noticed that the women stood in separate groups. The scene was truly fantastic. The men wore on their heads a "lueză," or oval piece of cloth, ornamented with little white shells, which hides the forehead. Most of them had the nasal cartilage perforated, and wore a small cylindrical adornment, made of a white shell or of wood, and called a "ztigau," which varied in size—some of them were four inches in length and one third of an inch in diameter. Sometimes, when they have no "ztigau," the natives wear instead the stump of a cigar, with which these Papuans are never unprovided. The women wear, in place of the "ztigau," ear-rings in the form of a disc made of white shells. Similar discs are also worn by both men and women as ornaments for their foreheads, and are sometimes plain, sometimes carefully carved, and although the workmanship is simple, it costs the artists much toil and patience, for they have no tools except the points of their parangs, or knives. As I said before, they are always provided with cigars, consisting of a small quantity of tobacco rolled in a piece of pandanus leaf, and these they carry in the perforated cartilages of their ears and noses.

I do not know whether myself or these people were most astonished at our sudden meeting in this place. I regarded them with interest and curiosity; they looked at me with the greatest amazement, not unmingled with fear.

At last my men, who, being heavily laden, had

walked slowly, and were at some distance behind, came up, and with them my interpreter. He, however, did not understand the language of these people. I discovered that they belonged to a mountain tribe, and that they were returning from the coast, whither they betake themselves from time to time to obtain a certain kind of salt, extracted from the ashes of a plant which grows on the sea-shore. Some of them belonged to a village on the mountain in front of us; they were those I had seen coming down towards the stream. They were acquainted with my companions, and presently they invited us to come and sleep at their houses. We accepted the invitation, and, after bidding farewell to those who were obliged to go on, and presenting them with a little tobacco, we began our ascent to the village. By climbing from rock to rock and stone to stone, grasping now the roots, now the boughs, we came to a better path, and at length to the houses, which are built on the top of the hill, 500 feet above the bed of the stream. Here, completely surrounding a few small plantations of bananas, a forest, more majestic than imagination can depict, extends on all sides. It is too dense to be penetrated by the sun's rays, and the earth and stones are covered with lovely ferns, and lycopodium of every form, and gradation of colour. From my elevated position I revelled in one of the most sublime sunsets of which I had ever dreamed. The prospect before me included an extensive tract of country as well as the sea. The island of Mansinam seemed to float on a sea of flame, and to blend with a sky also on fire. As

the day declined, the forest resounded with the farewell songs of hundreds of birds, to the last rays of the setting sun, whose beauty probably inspired them to sing its praises, even as it filled me with contemplative admiration. The heavens paled little by little, the sea grew dark, and the shades of night, which in this country follow closely upon sunset, overspread everything. The birds put their heads under their wings, awaiting the morn, when they should again salute the sun; and I climbed up by means of a long ladder to the house which was to afford me shelter. The house was rectangular in form, and large enough for four families. It was built on piles, twenty to twenty-five feet above the ground; and the only materials used in its construction were bamboos, trunks of trees, and palm leaves. I found the house occupied by a few infirm old women, crouching over the fireplace. They received me very politely, and offered me bananas and some excellent sugar-cane. I provided for dinner and supper at the same time, and ate with appetite one half of a gowra, cooked in the ashes, and which I was obliged to defend several times from the attentions of a polite Papuan, who wanted to turn it over and over among the cinders. I preferred to do my own cooking, as these people are as yet innocent of the use of soap. And now, as I am tired, and have written this account of to-day's adventures in the midst of the noisy chatter of the natives, I am going to rest.

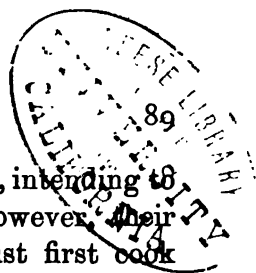
*September 5th.*—Notwithstanding the incessant talking of my hosts, which they kept up to a very late hour, I slept soundly; and hardly had

*Again on the March.*

day dawned when I roused my people, intending to set off at once. Such was not, however, their intention, for they told me they must first cook their bananas, and provide themselves with a store of sugar-cane. I agreed to let them have their own way, and we did not start until eight o'clock. The owner of the house and some of his women were willing to accompany us. We first descended to our stream of yesterday, and went up its bed for a short time, and then began to ascend the hill to the right, by a fatiguing path which was to take us to a village called Putat. The dense branches of the lofty trees protected us, however, from the rays of the sun; and as my men had distributed a portion of their loads among the people who had voluntarily constituted themselves our companions, we went gaily onwards at a smart pace.

A little before noon we reached the top of a hill, where we found a village, composed of four houses, inhabited by about fifty people. From this point, directing my gaze to the north-east, I could see the coast all the way to Dorey, and also distinguish the island of Mansinam, like a black spot on a white ground, the latter being represented by the sea, which was covered with white mist. Towards the west stretched a flat country, which, from a distance or from an altitude, appeared to be a plain covered with dense vegetation, with a few insignificant hills. On the south-west were lofty mountains, also covered with luxuriant vegetation.

I was politely received by the people of the village, and invited to rest in a house belonging





to the head man. The women here were clad—I was going to say, decently, though certainly their garment was not more extensive than that of Eve when she first made use of the traditional fig-leaf. Morally, however, they are completely clothed, for in their eyes nudity does not exist.

After we had been about an hour in the village, called Putat by the natives, I thought my bearers were sufficiently rested, and ordered them to make preparations for resuming our route towards Hatam. Great was my astonishment when their answer was conveyed to me; it was to the effect that we had already arrived at Hatam, which was the limit of our journey, and that naturally they did not intend to go any further.

At first when I heard this from the interpreter I thought it must be a joke; but I was soon forced to believe that they really refused to proceed, and maintained that we were at Hatam. I was powerless to compel them to obey by force, being only one against many; and it was useless to offer them higher pay, for they were quite contented with the covenanted sum. I then determined to have recourse to a stratagem, indeed the opportunity for it was supplied by themselves. They came to me, and asked to be paid their wages as agreed. I replied, "No, you have bound yourselves to accompany me as far as Hatam, and I have agreed to pay you accordingly. I will pay you then, and not before." They answered, "This is Hatam; pay us. How do you know that this is not Hatam?" I took my aneroid out of my pocket, and, laying my finger on a point on the disc, said, "Here is Hatam; this instru-

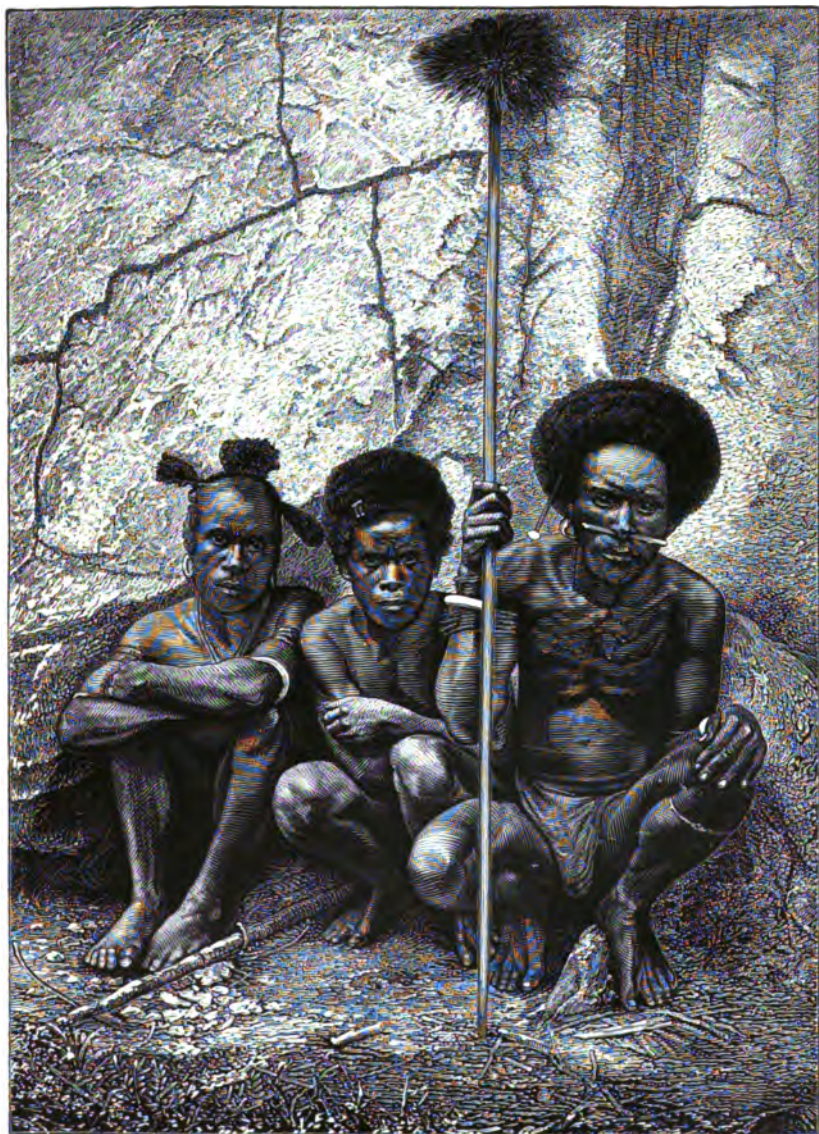
ment tells me where it is." I showed them where Andai lay, and explained to them that the aneroid indicated the altitude of the places I was in. It is impossible to describe their astonishment. They, nevertheless, objected that my assertion did not prove that this was so. I, therefore, made a mark at the point of the aneroid observed at the time, and invited them to accompany me to the top of a hill in the vicinity, the height of which I had measured at sight, and prophesied to them that when we arrived there we should find the aneroid had undergone such and such an amount of variation. One of them was anxious to keep the instrument in his own hands during our ascent of the hill; and the others stopped several times to mark the slight variations which took place, and which I was ready to indicate to them. We arrived at the top of the hill, and they saw that what I had predicted happened. When about to descend, they asked for a counter proof; the point which the needle touched was marked, and I also marked the point which would be indicated when we reached the houses, where, when we arrived, the proof was acknowledged to be complete. I knew where Hatam must be; they knew they could not take me in. The report of this experiment soon spread, and in a short time every man and woman in the village wanted to see the little thing that told the stranger and white man where lay the most remote villages of the forest and the most distant mountains. They said, "Well, let us rest to-day; to-morrow we will go with you to Hatam."

I was more than satisfied with this proposal,

and making myself as comfortable as I could in the house placed at my disposal, I ate my dinner with a very good appetite.

After dinner I went out insect-hunting, and with the aid of the women made a good collection. I was not a little surprised to find myself in a grove of real oaks (*Quercus*), with leaves and acorns exactly resembling those of Europe, although, doubtless, it is a species new to botanists. I also saw two beautiful birds of paradise, the first of that kind I have seen. Their bright colouring left no doubt in my mind as to their identity. I may therefore be certain that at last I have reached the country of the *Xanthomelus aureus*. Evening soon came, and although I was invited to sleep in the house, I preferred remaining in the verandah, where I could plainly hear the chattering of the natives, and especially of the women—as loquacious in these wild lands as in other countries.

*September 6th.*—At 7 a.m. we left Putat. My escort is increased by about twenty people—men, women, and children. Four of these people were paid to assist in carrying the loads of my men, which were too heavy; the rest came as a pastime. A pretty little girl of six or seven years old led the way; she too, carried a nokin, or net-work bag, containing bananas, yams, and a little dog, of which she was very fond, though it was certainly the most hideous member of the canine family within my knowledge. The child was pretty and attractive, but in vain did I attempt to make friends with her. Every time her eyes and mine met she set up a shrill squalling,



UCOOT.  
(ARPAK.)

AMAR.  
(MANSINAM.)

KORONOI.  
(DOREY.)

*Vol. I., p. 92.*



and neither by coaxing nor presents could I succeed in overcoming her antipathy and dread. She went on in advance of us, clearing away the troublesome and wonderfully-abundant spiders' webs from the path with a green bough, which she carried in one hand. Her little sister, three or four years old, followed her; then came her mother. The latter was the woman in whose house I lodged, and whom I therefore took to be the wife of the head man. She is robust, well-made, and rather good-looking; her hair and skin are of a rusty hue; her eyes are large and full of expression; and, compared with the other ladies of the company, she may certainly boast of being a beauty. The other women followed after her, laden with provisions, carried in their nokins, and armed with spears, which they use like the Alpenstock, and which the steepness of the paths requires. Among the women I remarked one, apparently about fifteen years of age, whom I took for a young girl, though I was afterwards told that she was the wife of a man thirty-five years of age or more, who was following. She was blacker than any of her companions; her skin almost glistened, and her eyes sparkled beneath her long eyelashes; her teeth were whiter than ivory, and formed a striking contrast with her ebony face. In her hair and hanging over her forehead were white shells, gracefully arranged, and a necklace of the same hung down over her bosom. Her figure was slender, supple, and elegant, and all her movements were graceful. Her expression was full of vivacity and intelligence; her smile was sweet, her voice

was harmonious and attractive. From time to time she sang a strange, wild song, but it was, at the same time, sweet and melancholy. The sound of her voice appeared to revive the spirits and strength of her companions. Although laden, like them, with a heavy nokin, she was always happy and contented, and never seemed tired. The inevitable share of misfortune which falls to the lot of every member of the human family, had not yet come to her. As she sang, she appeared to me to be as happy as the birds which hovered above her; and her light movements and eager glances reminded me of the wild gazelle. I have said that she was the wife of a man much older than herself; but that fact does not exclude the probability of her being still a maiden; for damsels of the most tender years are often given as wives to old men, who merely make servants of them. The women, as usual, wore a number of bracelets, made of brass wire and shells; and, were it possible, I should say that they had divested themselves of a portion of their usual clothing for the journey.

On leaving the village we took a downward path, and passed some kobon, or plantations, where I saw tobacco, sugar-cane, bananas, yams, and Indian corn, under cultivation. After a descent of some hours we again entered a forest of lofty, but sparse trees, through whose trunks we had clear vistas, the soil not being thickly covered with underwood. I remarked the total absence of birds in this forest.

At length we found ourselves in the bed of a stream, much wider than that through which

we had passed on the previous day. There was but little water; the stones and rocks at the bottom burned our feet, and we could not bear to put our hands on them. For three hours we were compelled to walk under the fiery rays of the sun. The heat was excessive. At the foot of the mountain of Putat we had descended to between 700 or 800 feet above the level of the sea; but we soon began again to ascend the rugged bed of the stream, in a south-westerly direction; and after about two hours and a half we made a decided turn to the south-west, and entered a narrow pass between two lofty mountains, where, somewhat protected by their shade from the fiery rays of the sun, we breathed more freely.

In this narrow pass was a little brook, and its limpid water, running over a bottom of fine sand, invited us to a brief halt. Some bananas and ears of Indian corn were cooked, and at the same time the natives performed their ablutions, being especially careful to wash their long hair, which I observe they do at every possible opportunity. Another thing which I observe is, that the men never remove the cloth which serves them as clothing until they are some way off from us, showing how strong is the feeling of modesty in them, notwithstanding that, according to our ideas, they go about in a state of nudity. Having eaten our frugal meal, and being somewhat refreshed, we began to climb the mountain on our left. I had grumbled at being compelled to walk on burning stones in the bed of the stream, under the potent rays of an equatorial sun, but I now had to acknowledge that even



that road was preferable to the rugged path which, weakened as I was by fever, of which I had a slight attack last night, I had to climb. I thought I should never reach the top. At last, however, we did attain the summit, and then our path became easier. Below us lay the forest we had traversed. We went on as though between two walls, walking among beautiful tree-ferns, bamboos, and other low-growing plants. For some time we occasionally caught a distant glimpse of the sea, and then there lay before us a grand landscape of great extent. At half-past 2 p.m. a violent storm came on, accompanied by a deluge of rain, against which there was no shelter. Our—or rather, my—misery increased. The ground had become so slippery that I could with difficulty keep my feet. Fortune favoured us, however, and towards 5 p.m. we climbed a height, where we found two small huts made of bark. They were uninhabited, and had probably been built to serve on occasions similar to the present. My Papuans proposed to pass the night here, and I readily consented.

I took possession of one of the huts with my baggage; the men established themselves in the other, or in similar ones, which they quickly improvised. Good fires to cook our supper were soon made, and I had my clothes, which were soaked with rain, dried. Some hours were passed in talking and smoking, and then we all went to our repose after the toil of the day. The women had made a hut for themselves, apart from those which the men occupied.

*September 7th.*—I did not sleep well last night; it rained, and the roof of my hut did not keep off

the rain—it was cold besides; and the women chattered and laughed nearly all night. This morning I was soon afoot, and before setting out made for myself a little sago-soup, but without salt, for the man who carried my provisions had gone with others last night, to some huts farther on, and consequently I had no dinner or supper yesterday, and no breakfast this morning. When the men were all ready—their equipment did not take them long—we continued our journey, and after climbing for a short time, reached the top of the mountain, at an altitude of 3600 feet above the sea. Here we met the party who had gone on in front of us, and halted for breakfast. I was hungry, and felt I could not go on without eating something more substantial than sago. While we were cooking our breakfast one of the men pointed out a black bird, which, from its singular appearance, I took to be one of the most beautiful and rare species of birds of paradise, *Lophorina atra*. It was perched on the top of a very high tree, and I could not succeed in killing it; it was, however, sufficient for me to have seen it, for I am now certain we have come to the country of the “rare birds of paradise” of Wallace, and at the sight my strength revived. From this point we could see Hatam, in a westerly direction, separated from us by a deep valley. Towards the north and north-west we saw what looked like a vast plain, covered with dense vegetation; there were also some low hills; and towards the south a range of loftier mountains, which I believe are the Black Mountains, or Arfak, marked in the map in lat. S. 1°. 4′, and

Greenwich long. E.  $134^{\circ} 2'$ , and set down as 9300 feet high. Even admitting that I did not see Mount Arfak itself, I maintain that the mountains which I did see, from the place I was standing in, are ramifications of that mountain. Towards the east the foliage obstructed the view, and I could see nothing.

We resumed our march by a good path. The ground was covered with moss, ferns, and other plants, in themselves indications to the traveller of the height which he has reached. We then began to descend, and presently the path became very bad, almost as fatiguing as the ascent. Although long years of experience had accustomed me to mountain travel, I did not escape some falls, which provoked good-humoured laughter on the part of my companions. The latter proceeded with slow, but certain steps; and I envied them their feet, which they use almost like hands, grasping, with the great toe, now a root, again a stone, and so getting a firm hold. At 10 a.m. we reached the bed of a stream. From a height of 3600 feet, we had descended to 2700 feet. Here we found much more water than in the stream which we passed yesterday and the day before. A small river rises here, which runs into the little bay of Geelvink, in lat. S.  $0^{\circ} 42'$ , long. E. Greenwich  $133^{\circ} 40'$ , called Prafi by the natives. We halted for half an hour at the foot of the mountain, near a waterfall which comes leaping down from the top of a hill, broken into several cascades, all of which are not visible, owing to the vegetation. The water falls from a height of 700 feet.

We continued to ascend the bed of the stream

for some miles, and then, entering the forest and turning to the right, we took the path which was to conduct us to Hatam. We walked over a level tract of forest land, where the vegetation was luxuriant and dense, and my eye was refreshed by the sight of a plant in full blossom. Its bright red flowers gave animation to a scene, which, had it not been for this shrub,<sup>1</sup> I must have described as very sombre. I especially admired the tree-ferns, with their magnificent verdure and colossal proportions. The forest was intersected in every direction by little rivulets of clear, sparkling water. We had again to ascend a very steep path from hill to hill. And, to make our ascent the more fatiguing, we were caught in the rain. The yellowish clay, which is the formation of these hills, is as slippery as soap when soaked. At last, about 3 p.m., we came to the first houses of Hatam, which are inhabited by two or three families. We were all excessively tired. I asked for the head man (Corano) of Hatam, but was told that he lived higher up. When we were somewhat rested, I told my people to take up their bags and set off again for the house of the Corano; they refused, however, to go a step further, telling me that we had arrived at Hatam, and that was enough. With my aneroid in my hand I attempted to prove that we were not yet at Hatam, but they would have none of it. When I first showed it to them, I had by chance pointed out on the dial an altitude of 3500 feet, and we were then at about that

<sup>1</sup> I took a specimen of this shrub to Beccari, who told me it was a rhododendron.

elevation. I insisted they should conduct me to the Corano, and they presented a Papuan to me as the man. I received him, laughing, and said he was not the Corano, whom I knew very well indeed. All was, however, in vain. Three of the Andai men also wanted to be paid, saying they intended to return that very day; and, as they had given more trouble than all the rest, I agreed to pay them, and send them about their business. At last I made them promise that two men should go and summon the Corano, and that he should come without delay.

The house in which I am at present is 3500 feet above the sea level, on the slope of a mountain, and it faces almost due east. The view, however, is by no means an extended one, owing to the mountain and the surrounding forests. The house is tolerably large, built on piles, and raised high above the ground. The side which faces east is provided with a verandah the whole length of the house; the other side, which faces the mountain, has a small platform in front, instead of a verandah. The women occupy the left of the house as you enter, and the men the right; each family has a fireplace, over which I found some children and old men crouching. Among the latter there was one paralyzed and blind.

Everything is blackened with smoke, and even by day darkness reigns. The house stands higher than any of its surroundings, and has a garden, in which Indian corn and sweet potatoes are grown. Near the house, and on one side of it, is a smaller one, which, I have just been told, is set apart for the use of women in childbirth, and to

this the men are never admitted; at a little distance is another house, newly built, and not yet inhabited.

Towards evening a violent storm arose, and a dense cloud now envelopes everything. I was offered a fireplace in the middle of the room. They probably considered me of the neuter gender, for they placed me midway between the men and the women. I am an object of great curiosity, and it may be that they have put me in the middle so that all can have a look at me. They seemed most keenly interested in seeing me writing by the light of a candle. I saw very few birds to-day, and succeeded in shooting only three or four small birds, which I found in the bed of the stream. They resembled our saxicolina in their habit of flying from stone to stone, and also in their colouring. I shot a fine *Peltops Blainvillei*; I had already obtained two at Ramoi, but it is evidently a very rare bird.

*September 8th.*—I slept badly, having had another attack of fever during the night; nevertheless, day had scarcely broken when I proposed to go in search of the Corano, who had not turned up last night. I was told that the men who went yesterday evening to announce my arrival to him had been driven back by the rain, but that they would soon be off again, and that I had better await the coming of the Corano where I was. As I did not feel very well, I did not care to urge my point, and lay down all the morning. After dinner I went out, and, ascending a little hill at the rear of the house, I shot two or three birds; amongst them one

which I believed to be a young *Parotia searpennis*, one of the most beautiful birds of paradise known, but of which no specimen has as yet been brought to Europe, except in the shape of greatly-mutilated skins, prepared by the natives. Here was another proof that we had come to the land of the rare birds of paradise of Wallace, and now that I am here I mean to remain !

Although no Corano has arrived, I am going to bed to-night in a contented frame of mind.

*September 9th.*—This was a great day for me ! What would not many naturalists give to be in my place this evening ! How many of them would prefer this dirty, smoky hovel to all the cafés and theatres of a city !

This morning I felt quite strong again, and, accompanied by a Papuan, I went out early to shoot. We climbed for a couple of hours without a pause, until we reached an elevated plain, which we crossed, and then ascending again for another hour, we found ourselves on the crest of a lofty mountain, from which I had a splendid view of an enormous extent of country. No other lofty chain of mountains met my eye, and it seemed to me that our mountain rose up straight from the plain, which of course I could not see beneath me. The aneroid gave me the height of this mountain as 5300 feet above the sea level. The forest presented a magnificent spectacle ; the trees, though very tall, were not so crowded as those in the plain, and the ground was so covered as to present quite an Alpine appearance. The Papuan drew my attention to a black bird which was flying from branch to branch

on the highest trees, and repeating a sound like "gned, gned." I soon killed one, and what was my joy when I beheld a *Lophorina atra* in its garment of love! If I were to compare the plumage of this bird to anything, it must be to velvet and satin. On its breast is a shield, which extends over its sides; it is like satin to the touch, blueish-green in colour, and it glistens like silk or metal. A kind of mantle covers the whole of its body from the neck backwards, and is also like velvet to the touch. Although it generally appears to be extremely black, in certain lights it has a purple tinge. The head is covered as though with scales, of a dark green colour, glistening with a metallic lustre.

The natives give this bird the name of *niedda*, derived from the sound of its notes. Rich in the possession of such a lovely prize, I prepared to return homewards; but my guide, as though determined that I should recognize all the wealth of this country in one day, led me somewhat lower down, and posted me behind the fallen trunk of an old tree, which, being covered with moss and ferns and other parasitic plants, was a real botanical monument. The place was not very dark, but well shaded by beautiful trees, among which I remarked a magnificent *Araucaria*. On the trunk of one of them I noticed a number of little birds climbing about and looking for insects in the bark. As no climbing bird is known to exist in New Guinea, this one, from the peculiar form of its feet, and still more from its habits, must belong to a semi-climbing species. The sight of a fir-tree brought my own Alps before my eyes;



but the note of a bird, and a hand of my guide placed on my shoulder, while with the other he pointed to something on a neighbouring tree, quickly recalled me from those visions of the past in far-distant places which had begun to take possession of my mind, to the fact that I was in the country of the rare bird of paradise. Looking in the direction indicated by my guide's finger, I saw a perfectly black bird sitting on a tree at no great distance, and I had already taken aim, when my guide touched me, and signalled to me to pause. Fear lest the bird should fly away suggested to me to disobey him; but on the other hand, the imprudence of doing anything in opposition to the suggestion of the native upon whom I had to depend, compelled me to obey. I was quite right; for soon afterwards the *Serpennis*—such was the bird he had pointed out to me—alighted from the lofty tree on the ground, at a spot where it was quite clear of grass and leaves, and formed a small patch surrounded by shrubs. When I saw the bird there, I thought my companion had wished me to wait until he alighted in that spot in order that I might shoot him more easily than through the branches of trees. I raised my gun, supporting it on the trunk of the fallen tree, so that it could not be seen by the bird, and I was on the point of firing when my guide a second time laid his hand on my arm, and made me a sign to wait. Curiosity to learn what he meant, induced me to refrain, although with a bad grace. After standing still for some moments in the middle of the little glade, the beautiful bird peered about to see if all was safe, and then he began to move the







Visconti, Rome, 1874. 1874.

PAROTIA SEXENNIS



long feathers of his head, six in number, from which his name of sexpennis is derived, and to raise and lower a small tuft of white feathers above his beak, which shone in the rays of the sun like burnished silver; he also raised and lowered the crest of stiff feathers, almost like scales, and glittering like bits of bright metal with which his neck was adorned. He spread and contracted the long feathers on his sides, in a way that made him appear now larger and again smaller than his real size, and jumping first on one side and then on the other, he placed himself proudly in an attitude of combat, as though he imagined himself fighting with an invisible foe. All this time he was uttering a curious note, as though calling on some one to admire his beauty, or perhaps challenging an enemy. The deep silence of the forest was stirred by the echoes of his voice.

I should never have tired of admiring his beauty and gestures, every one of which revealed some fresh charm. But the fear arose that he might fly away, and before my guide, who was no less interested than myself in the sight, could hinder me, I pressed the trigger of my gun and fired. When the smoke cleared away, a black object lying in the middle of the glade showed me that I had not missed my mark; and, full of joy, I ran to possess myself of my prey; but as I drew near my courage failed me, I could not stretch forth my hand, and full of remorse, I said to myself, "Man is indeed cruel. The poor creature was full of happiness! one flash from a gun, and all his joy is past and at an end, and his life is

over. His beauty remains, but what boots it to him? No more than the fame of men avails them after their death. What good to me will be the renown of having been the first European to penetrate into these mountain passes, the first to see this marvel of creation in life, if I am destined to die to-day or to-morrow by the hand of a native, and not to return to the land of my birth? Let, however, fate have what it may in store for me, at any rate to-day I am contented." And such pleasure at having obtained so beautiful a bird succeeded to my remorse, that I no longer accused myself of cruelty.

The beautiful creature who, a minute before, full of life, seemed to challenge the whole universe to deadly combat or to match him in beauty, was now stretched inanimate on the field he had selected for his tournament. Here and there some torn feathers revealed the havoc caused by the gun, and a drop of blood shone like a ruby placed with other gems in a black velvet casket, for the feathers of his head and golden breast can only be compared to jewels. No more proud movements! no more of the gentle or angry gestures of a few moments before! Nothing but a convulsive twitch, the feeble flapping of a wing, and the quivering of one leg! nothing but the signs of his death struggle! His eyelids, as they opened and closed two or three times, revealed a fresh beauty; for the eyes of this bird are very curious, the iris presenting a double colour, the pupils being black surrounded with sky-blue, which, when they contract and dilate, merges into a delicate tint of yellowish green. I had

not the courage to touch him until he was quite dead.

When preparing it I discovered that this bird, called Coran-a by the natives, lives on fruit; I found in its stomach the fruit of the myristica, and also of a fig-tree which abounds in these mountains.

I found in the *sempennis* the same admirable muscular arrangement for putting the feathers which adorn the neck in motion, as in the *lophorina*. I also remarked a special formation of the cranium of the *sempennis*, which differs from that of all birds hitherto known to me, being perfectly flat on the top, with a prominence in front. Before returning home I shot three other specimens, and the reader may imagine how pleased I was with my day's work, and with what ardour I set to work at preparing the skins. To show how completely my remorse had disappeared, I may add that I actually ate the flesh of my victims.

My dinner was interrupted by a visit from the Corano of Hatam with his retinue.

Hearing a noise at the door, I turned my head, and beheld a number of men, who entered one after the other, and after laying down their arms, which consisted of bows, arrows, long spears, and parangs, stood in silence before me.

They stood there watching me with the greatest curiosity. They were about twenty in number, and all wore the "lueza" on their foreheads, also the "bill" over the eyes, and the "ztigau" in the nose. Their arms were adorned with bracelets of white shell, and their hair, ears, and arms were decorated with bright-coloured flowers. I do not



know whether they or I felt the greatest curiosity; although it was not the first time I had seen a similar assemblage. After the men, came women and children, who, as usual, formed part of the escort.

A greater surprise was, however, in store for me. Presently, a man walked in as the others had done, armed, and adorned with flowers and necklaces, like them, but accompanied by a son of about twenty-five and a daughter of about twenty, both of whom were albinos. Their hair is whitish-brown, their eyes blue, and their skin white, like that of Europeans. Although they were covered so far as in these regions decency requires, the colour of their skin made them appear to me more nude than their black companions, for in my eyes the black colour is equivalent to one of our garments. This pair reminded me of our notion of our first parents. At that moment I wondered (as I wonder still) whether those who believe that all men are descended from a common stock, or from a single couple, have decided whether that couple—the first man and woman—were created black or white. Seeing these two white persons, man and woman, born of two black parents, this problem presented itself to me, especially when I afterwards saw a third, a daughter of the Corano, who was equally white. I said to myself, “Were Adam and Eve born black or white?” These albinos are white owing to what is commonly called a *lusus naturæ*; that is all very well, but it is not possible that such *lusus naturæ* are very frequent. Let us put the case that this brother and sister, being ignorant of their rela-

tionship, marry; is it not probable that children would be born to them in whom the *lusus naturæ* would be repeated? And if these again happened to be in a desert country, and intermarried, in all likelihood it would be repeated over and over again; and a race of people with the characteristics of our two albinos—that is to say, a white race, originated. Now if this be admissible, I asked myself, is it not probable that Adam and Eve were black, that some of their children were born albinos, and that thus the white race was produced? By means of albinos we can explain the derivation of white from black; but it does not seem easy to derive black from white, for I do not know of a single instance on record of black children born of white parents.

This, of course, is merely a theory, which the sight of these three white people in the midst of their black compatriots caused me to form, and one which I do not seek to establish; but it ought, I think to interest those who believe that the whole human race is descended from one couple. I myself am of opinion that it matters very little whether Adam and Eve were white or black, but I take the liberty of believing that they were the latter, which belief is, however, founded on no firmer basis than is that of those who hold the contrary.

The Corano of Hatam is a fine man, strong, tall, and robust; and as I admired his classical features, I was strongly reminded of those of the ancient Roman emperors.

After some brief ceremonies of introduction had been gone through, I invited the Corano and his

family to share my frugal repast. He accepted the invitation for them all, and they were soon seated around me on my mat, as they do not as yet make use of tables. As I had with me only a very small quantity of brandy, I offered but one glass of it to the whole august family in common. The Corano, however, kept this glass exclusively for himself, and I, much to my regret, was unable to exercise hospitality in this respect to the pretty albino. I think the omission passed unnoticed, for in Papua the ladies are little accustomed to receive civilities from their lords. Through the medium of the interpreter the Corano welcomed me to his country, and presented me with some shucks of Indian corn, some yams, and two or three dozen mandarin oranges, which his daughter had brought in her nokin. I observe that although the missionaries have introduced the true orange and the pummelo (*Citrus decumanus*) into Dorey and Mansinam, they do not possess this species of mandarin orange in those islands. I am almost led to believe it indigenous here; and all the more so because I have found a species of citron-tree in these forests, apparently indigenous, which bears a large and very acrid fruit. The Corano presented me also with a little tobacco, which the natives grow, but which, from being cut while still green, is far from being as pleasant as from its quality it ought to be.

We spent the rest of the day in talking, and I endeavoured to gather as much information as possible about birds and beasts.

*September 10th.*—This day was passed in receiving visits. From every part of the mountains

the Papuans came to see the first white man who had ventured to penetrate into their fastnesses. In the morning I had gone out shooting, and obtained a large number of birds, all of species hitherto unknown to me. On this account my present location appears very desirable.

I have procured a small house, not completely finished, in which I can work at putting my collections in order, and I propose to stay in it until I can go to the house of the Corano.

*September 11th.*—To-day my flag waves over my house. I am proud to see the colours of Italy flying, knowing mine to be the first European flag ever hoisted in the interior of this almost unexplored land.

My house, according to the custom of the country, consists of only one room, which I have divided into two, by means of some bark which I bought from the natives. One half I make my laboratory and sleeping-room; the other my kitchen and reception-room. I have furnished my apartments with shelves for drying the skins of birds, and a table made of bark, for writing or work; but I have adopted the style of the Papuans for eating and sleeping, a mat serving me both for dinner-table and bed. I am a good deal inconvenienced by the importunate visits of the natives, who come in crowds to see me, and all want to sell me yams, Indian corn, and sweet potatoes, instead of bringing me insects in exchange for my Venetian beads, which they are very desirous to obtain.

In the morning I again ascended the mountain, on which I found the lophorina and parotia, seve-

ral of which species I again had the good fortune to shoot. I also obtained another beautiful bird, hitherto unknown to me, *Melipotēs gymnops* (*n. gen. et n. sp.*).

The natives who accompanied me on my march returned to their homes to-day, and I sent a message to Beccari, asking for a supply of provisions, as I propose remaining here as long as possible. Three of the men, however, begged permission to remain, which I readily granted, as they will act as my guides in the forest; and I knew by experience that the people of the village would be by no means willing to go out with me, being apparently afraid. I live well on sweet potatoes, Indian corn, rice, and birds of paradise; and the water being excellent, I do not feel the want of wine and brandy.

The Corano and his suite are still here. I wish they would take their departure, for they make such an incessant din that they prevent me from working by day, or sleeping by night.

*September 12th.*—I have found a fruit-bearing tree, frequented by various species of birds, but which is so lofty that it is very difficult to bring down a bird from its branches. I have got the natives to make me a ladder, so that I can ascend the tree to the place where the boughs begin; here, seated at my ease, I wait for birds coming to feed on the fruit. The ladder consists of two strong creepers, which have climbed up the trunk of the tree itself, joined together by my men with a sufficient number of cross-binders to make a fair ladder of it, with a secure footing.

The first bird I shot to-day was a beautiful

pigeon, of a species new to me (*Ptilopus bellus*, n. sp.).

*September 13th.*—The Corano came this morning to take leave, and with the greatest satisfaction I saw him depart with his followers. To-day all is quiet in the village, and we are, as it were, a family party; but last night it was utterly impossible to sleep, for the natives chanted incessantly a lugubrious and monotonous strain, which they had begun early in the morning.

Before starting, the Corano and his companions each cut a long tough stalk of grass and made ten knots in it, and every native carried a similar one. My interpreter told me that the Corano and other mountain chiefs had determined to make an expedition towards Amberbaki in search of human heads, and the knots in the stalks of grass serve to mark the number of days before they are bound to meet again. They say that they will start from hence. I, however, put little faith in what they say.

## CHAPTER VII.

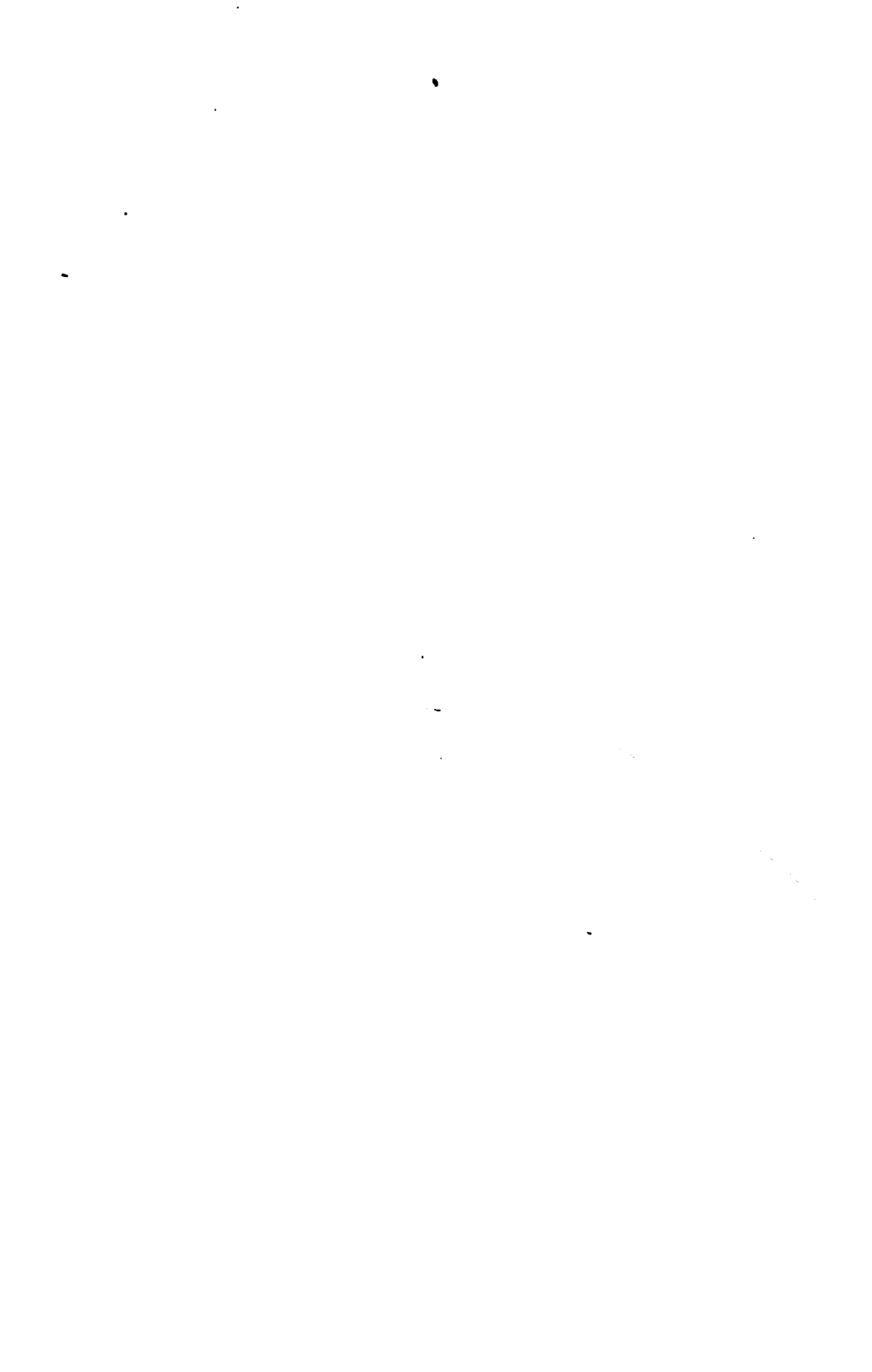
Rules of the chase among head-hunters—A superb bird—A false alarm—A native plot—Its failure—A plot of my own—Its success—A black day—I leave Hatam.

*September 14th.*—This was a gloomy day, the rain came down in torrents, and a dense mist spread over everything, so I remained at home. I endeavoured to induce some men of this place to go to Andai for supplies, but without success. Birds of paradise and sweet potatoes are not bad fare, but they are sometimes scarce, and it is also possible to have too much of them. I have just learnt that after an expedition in search of human heads, when the hunters have only succeeded in procuring one, it is divided between the chiefs of the expedition and the man who slew the individual.

*September 16th.*—Yesterday I had another attack of fever, but this morning I was able to go out shooting, and had the good fortune to kill a magnificent bird, which I have every reason to believe belongs to a hitherto unknown species of birds of paradise; he is a full-grown cock. This bird differs from other species of birds of paradise in the form of the beak, which resembles that of the hoopoe; and also in having downy plumage, and a differently shaped head. At first sight, too,



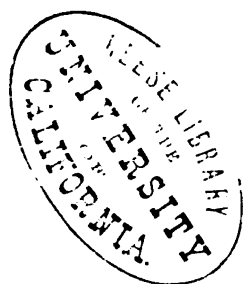






Painted by John Day & Son Ltd.

DRIPANORNIS ALBERTISII



he appears not to possess the beauty of his race; but after looking at him attentively in a good light, one perceives that he too is adorned with plumage of rich tints, and that his brilliant colours have a metallic lustre. Above the beak are two tufts or horns, formed of small feathers deeply marked with green and copper-coloured reflections. The long feathers which grow from the sides of the breast are, when closed, grey shot with a violet tint, but when spread they form almost a semi-circle around the body, and in certain lights shine like gold; in others like fire. Long feathers, of a greyish violet colour, grow from the sides, their edges being of a metallic violet lustre. The upper part of the wing and tail feathers are of a darkish yellow, as are those of the back, but sometimes of a still darker hue. The feathers of the throat are black shading off into olive colour; those of the breast, of a greyish purple, with an olive band; the abdomen is white. The beak is black, the eyes chestnut, and the feet dark lead colour. When the bird raises the long feathers on his sides and breast, they form two semi-circles, and he presents as extraordinary and beautiful a sight as one could behold. (*Drepanornis Albertisii*, n. gen. et n. sp.).

*September 17th.*—A poor day for collections, although I did succeed in killing a young *Xanthomelus aureus*, and some other small birds. The rain soon forced me to return home.

*September 18th.*—The first shot I fired this morning from my tree was rewarded by a Burong Raja (*Dasiptilus pesqueti*), one of the most curious of the parrot tribe I have yet shot. Its head is

singular, and, especially in the shape of the beak, resembles that of the hawk; the brilliant red of its wings makes it most beautiful; its thighs are also red; but its prevailing colour is black, spotted on the breast with ash colour and iron grey. Not only is this bird a beautiful addition to my collection, but also to my larder. I, however, prize much more highly a ground pigeon which I shot to-day. Its back is of a most beautiful metallic violet colour, and its wings reddish brown. Its neck is adorned with a metallic green collar, which is most brilliant. Its head is covered with long feathers, dark green in colour. It is above all remarkable for its circular tail, which is black with blue shades (*Otodiphaps nobilis*). I shot a good many other birds, and if I was overladen I must not complain, for my collections were added to, and the wants of my table supplied.

*September 20th.*—To-day I obtained a female of the new bird of paradise of which I gave a description on the 16th. This resembles in general colouring the hen birds of many other species of birds of paradise, such as the *Epimachus*, the *Diphillodes*, the *Cicinnurus*, the *Parotia*, and the *Lophorina*, which strikes me as remarkable, as all the above birds are of a quite distinct genus.

In the afternoon the stillness which had reigned for several days was broken by the arrival of some natives, who told us that a man belonging to Dorey had been slain by the men of Soboe; the latter, according to their story, would be revenged. One of the men said he had come from Andai, and that he brought me a message from

Beccari, who urged me to return to Andai as soon as possible. As he did not, however, prove to be the bearer of any letter, I refused to believe him; for if there had been any necessity for me to return to Andai, Beccari would certainly have written, and not sent a mere verbal message. Since the arrival of these people I notice something unusual in the conduct of my quiet neighbours, of which I am anxious to know the reason, although I see I must go to bed without finding it out. Immediately after nightfall they began to exorcise Settan<sup>1</sup>, which they are still at, and because he does not go away they are making a hideous din, shrieking and beating wooden stumps. It occurred to me that this was something similar to what happened to me at Ramoi. Am not I the Satan of whom they want to be rid? I refused to go to Andai to-morrow; they wanted me to do so, but I declined, saying I did not believe Beccari had sent me a verbal message.

*September 21st.*—I shot to-day another Burong Raja as he was eating a large fig, into which he plunged his long beak and part of his head. Is the peculiar shape of his head and beak meant to facilitate his feeding on certain fruits? On the same tree I killed some specimens of *Gymnocorvus senex*. The head of this bird—which varies very much in colour, being sometimes nearly black, sometimes nearly white—is partly bare, partly feathered. This bird also puts the whole of his beak and part of his head into the fruit, by which

<sup>1</sup> Settan, a Malay word signifying the Evil One, Satau, or Shaitan.

it would seem that both these species are adapted to feed on the same fruits.

The whole of last night my neighbours continued to cry out against Settan, and this morning some of those who arrived yesterday went to the Corano's house.

*September 22nd.*—I have to record something serious. The Corano arrived to-day, told me he was going to Andai, and asked me to accompany him. I on the contrary tried to persuade him to bring me fresh supplies on his return. He came with a small retinue, but expected the remainder to arrive, with the women, to-morrow. The Corano, perhaps with a view to make me go with him, confirmed the story of the murder of a Dorey man, told me that hostilities had broken out between the people of Hatam and those of Morris, a village very high up in the mountains, and added that my life was no longer safe where I was.

*September 23rd.*—To-day I again climbed a lofty peak, and I attained an elevation of about 5500 feet. Here I shot a young male of *Epimachus speciosus*, which I never met with in low-lying ground; but my guide told me it is found abundantly in still higher places. I also shot several *Parotia*, *Lophorina*, and other birds which were new to me.

When I returned home the Corano came, accompanied by a crowd of followers, and asked to speak with me. He repeated that he could no longer guarantee my safety; that he and his people were at war with another tribe, and that I should be killed if I remained here any longer. I replied that I did not believe either him or his followers;

and that finding the locality a good one for adding to my collections, I meant to remain at my own risk. The Corano then told me that he with all his people would depart in the course of the day, and that they should destroy, before doing so, all the kobon (plantations) to prevent their being plundered by the men of Soboe and Morris, by whom they expected to be attacked at every moment. I bade farewell to the Corano, telling him I did not believe a single word he said. Afterwards, more people arrived, and a great confusion reigned in the village. The women especially appeared to be in great alarm, while the men carried on a continuous conversation in an excited manner. They again came to me, and told me that I must depart at once, as their enemies were advancing. I still said I did not believe them, and begged them to leave me alone. I could not, however, fail to perceive that something serious was really going on, for I saw that they were actually beginning to destroy the plantations near the house.

I counted my cartridges, and found that at the rate of ten per diem I had sufficient for only five days. I had also bought two or three days before potatoes enough for five days. My rice was already exhausted, and I had had no salt since the 15th. I knew that if the natives really departed I should be reduced to the greatest straits, to say nothing of the danger I should incur on the part of hostile natives if it were true that they meant to attack the village. If I had to use my cartridges to procure food, I must abandon the hope of adding to my collections; if I



reserved them for the latter purpose, in a few days my sweet potatoes would be finished, and I should have hunger staring me in the face. I reflected, too, that if the natives went, I must lose all my collections for want of men to carry them to Andai. My situation appeared critical, and I determined before surrendering to strike a bargain. I sent for the Corano, and said to him, "I am not afraid of the men of Morris and Soboe, and have means of defending myself against them. I will not leave this place until it suits me so to do; but if you will stay here for five days with me, and at the end of that time will give me men to carry my baggage to Andai, then I will come with you, and I will defend you if necessity arises. You of course must supply me with food for the five days, selling me whatever I may require." After a good deal of arguing, the Corano at last promised what I wanted. I have then only five more days to remain in a country where every shot brings down a bird of a new species, and where every insect I pick up is also new to me. Words cannot depict the bitterness of my mortification at having to bow my head before a greater power! But what could I do alone here?

*September 24th.*—I may say the natives howled all night, for the cries they utter are more like howls than human sounds. To-day, however, they have been quiet, and I was able to shoot and prepare my birds in peace. Fresh specimens fall constantly to my gun.

*September 26th.*—This morning, before the sun showed itself above the tops of the mountains

opposite, and although the air was very cold, I climbed up into the tree which was now the constant scene of my sport. I had waited for about an hour, in the vain hope of getting a good shot, and had seen nothing, but a fine male *Xanthomellus aureus*, which had, however, settled for such a short time that I could not turn my gun on him; when a confused din of natives' voices reached my ears from the village, and I heard howling, shrieking, and cackling which I could not explain. While I was wondering what this hubbub could mean, I saw a Papuan youth running towards me along the path, out of breath, and making signs to me to come down and run to my house. Without comprehending why, I descended, and, as bad luck would have it, a ring I valued much, because it had been the companion of my adventures for eight years, slipped at the same moment from my finger. When I reached my house, I found the people assembled, both men and women, armed with spears, bows, and arrows. They were all shrieking, gesticulating, and making an infernal uproar.

I asked my interpreter, David, what was the meaning of all this arming, shrieking, and extravagant gesticulation. He answered that the men of Morris are coming down from the mountains to hunt us, that three of them have had the audacity to come close to the little village; that finding the people of Hatam there, they have withdrawn, but will soon return, and that a battle is imminent. He told me from the Corano that I must set forth for Andai at once, and he added that a number of women and

children had already betaken themselves to a place of safety. I merely replied, "Let whoever likes, go. I stay here at all risks until the fifth day, as agreed to. I can defend myself by myself against the whole tribe of Morris, and know how to secure my own safety." I then left them, and, followed by David, went into my kitchen.

The Papuans of this region have a great dread of poison infused into the atmosphere; I therefore determined to gain influence over them without having recourse to means and words which might exasperate them. I loaded some cartridges with bullets, carefully pouring into each a little melted fat, to which I added a few drops of the contents of one of the phials of my little medicine chest. When I had done this I shut myself up in my room. Some of the Papuans who had been standing outside the door, and observed my proceedings, at once went and related what they had seen. I learned from David, that they told the others I had poisoned the gun, which story they repeated one to another, speculating upon the amount of destruction I could deal with a poisoned gun. David, although a Christian and semi-civilized, is not without a certain amount of superstition; and, probably at the instigation of the others, he asked me if I had really poisoned the gun. Finding that he believed firmly that I could so, I reassured him. This was enough to establish order, and the natives became quiet; my belief was therefore confirmed, that there was really no question of the natives of Morris, but merely a plot of the people themselves, to which David was perhaps not a stranger.

After a short time, when I saw that calm was restored, I got a number of the natives, both men and women, to go and look for my ring. Some of them "made a charm" before starting, wishing to consult the oracle as to where they might find the ring. To perform this incantation, they took some pieces of pandanus leaves, cut in strips of equal sizes, two or three inches in length. They made different shapes out of these little strips, varying them sometimes in one way and sometimes in another, and then covering them over with one hand, they repeated some words which I could not understand, nor could my interpreter persuade them to repeat them to him.

They then placed all the strips on the palms of their hands, breathed upon them, and went to look for the ring in the place indicated by the charm. After having sought in vain for some time, they tried the charm again in another direction, admitting they had made a mistake, and that they must repeat the experiment. So far as I saw, I am convinced that such is their faith in their oracle that when they are unsuccessful they do not find fault with it for their failure, but believe that if the incantation does not succeed, it is owing to their own ignorance and inexperience. It appears that these and other charms are much in vogue among these tribes. Notwithstanding all their researches, neither their sharp eyes nor their charms could discover the lost ring, and I must therefore write down this day, the 26th of September, as a black one for me. I lost a ring I valued very much, I ran the risk of falling out with the

natives; not having been able to shoot, I had no birds either for my collection or for the table, and was forced to content myself with some ears



*Phalangista Bernsteinii.*

of Indian corn, which I obtained from the Corano, to allay the pangs of hunger.

*September 27th.*—The natives are not only quiet, but are working for me, and bring in a

good number of birds killed with arrows. Among these is a new species of eupetes (*Eupetes leucosticus*), four full-grown male sexpennis, and a new bird, *Ælurædus Arfakianus*. They have also brought me a number of insects, and a few



*Phalangista Pennata.*

mammiferous animals and frogs. I could not, however, obtain a specimen of the python, because they preferred eating it themselves. Among the mammiferous animals I may mention a beautiful

new species of cuscus, which is much esteemed by the natives for its flesh. The top of the tail is used to make earrings. In the morning the natives had begun to ask me to be off; but a few resolute words were sufficient, not only to bring them to their senses, but also to make them so well-behaved, that as I have said they made collections for me.

*September 28th.*—My baggage is prepared. Tomorrow is the day named for our departure; as our calendar, which consists of a piece of grass-stalk, on which the five days are noted by five knots, indicates.

*September 29th.*—Before the sun was up the natives were all preparing for departure. I, too, was ready, and distributed my treasures among the "braves." How I felt having to leave my little house, where I had passed some happy days, where also I had suffered, and felt the pangs of hunger! But what did it matter to me that I had to go to bed without supper, or after a very meagre one, so long as I could reckon on so many more beautiful birds! How it wrung my heart to be obliged to bid adieu to a place in which I had found real treasures, but where I certainly left many more. I shall not readily forget my little house at Hatam. At 7 a.m. the signal for our departure was given. Our company consisted of forty persons, without reckoning the dogs and pigs. Many of the latter were so young that they had to be carried in the women's nokins. The Corano headed the march, carrying my flag, and I came next. Notwithstanding his quick pace, I followed him without fatigue, so invigorated was I by the pure mountain air.

## CHAPTER VIII.

A signal—A halt—Camp fires—Bats, small and large—A night scene—A cruel deception—Footprints in the sand—Letters from Beccari—Andai—Severe illness, and good nursing—A resolution reluctantly formed—Sorong—We embark—A double anniversary—A birthday feast—A bonfire of a boat.

AT mid-day we reached a stream called War-mari, and halted for rest and food. Here we waited for the coming up of those of our party who, travelling more slowly, were some distance in our rear. The Corano, myself, and a few of the women, having arrived at the spot where we proposed to rest, the women lighted fires, and began to cook their food, consisting of grain and bananas. David, having lingered in the rear with the small supply of sweet potatoes procured for me before we set out, I was obliged for some time to contemplate the natives as they greedily ate their fill while I was suffering pangs of hunger, so severe that at last I could resist temptation no longer, but stole some bananas from a bag which had been incautiously left within my reach! At that moment I thoroughly understood how hunger may make a thief of an honest man.

We resumed our journey, and, when we had reached the foot of Mount Putat, the Corano suggested that we should walk in the bed of the river,



so as to avoid the long, steep ascent. I agreed, and we took this course so far as it formed our route; after which we re-entered the forest, crossed a wide, flat tract of country, and again began to ascend. We had advanced three or four miles when I heard the report of a gun in the direction of Putat. I thought immediately that Beccari, or some man sent by him with provisions, had reached Putat, and I answered by firing twice. Had he understood me? The direction of the wind, which was favourable to the sound coming to me, might have prevented his hearing the answering shots. What was to be done? It was now too late to turn back. On the other hand, my collections required care, for they were badly packed, in cases hurriedly made of bark, which was still damp, and therefore more likely to contribute to their ruin than to their preservation. There was no alternative but to continue on my way to Andai. I made a sign, therefore, to the Corano, and we walked on until night obliged us to halt, when we encamped under some large trees.

Several fires were lighted, round which the natives gathered in groups, and each one provided as best he could for his own comfort. As little by little the flames increased in brightness, the men and objects around assumed a picturesque and fantastic appearance, all things seeming to take new form. The bright light of so many fires on the dark skins of the natives threw the ornaments which they wore—chiefly necklaces and bracelets of white shell—into strong relief. Mingled with the voices of the natives around the fires, speaking,

discussing, and singing, was the crackling of the Indian corn which they were cooking for our supper, and the snapping of the firewood. Usually, the women have separate camps, and, though certainly not less loquacious than the men, they seem to prefer singing to talking. They indulge in a somewhat lugubrious song, which, although sad, is not disagreeable, and in which the ear, when accustomed to it, distinguishes soft and harmonious notes. How happy all these people seemed at that moment! And yet they had but the sky for a roof, and the earth for a bed, and, for food only a few ears of Indian corn. Had I not been so intent upon returning to Andai, I also might have been happy under the same conditions as these natives. My fire had been made apart from the others; and, as I stood beside it, contemplating this scene, or moved to and fro, preparing my scanty supper, I reflected on the condition, the fate, and the relative happiness of my companions. Many times I said to myself, Why was I not also born a savage? why, at least, cannot I become one? When my Indian corn was sufficiently cooked I devoured it as if it had been the most delicious food, and then I began to prepare the skins of some birds I had killed on our way; among them was a small bird, hitherto unknown to me (*Elgotheles Albertisii*, n. sp.). By degrees the voices of the natives were hushed, the singing ceased, and only a subdued murmur was heard, soon followed by complete silence. The fires burned low, or were extinguished altogether, and the partial obscurity which followed gave the surroundings a weird appearance.

Whether from weariness or from the interest awakened in me by the scene around, I know not; but I was quite unable to sleep, and for a long time I stood contemplating that scene—but lately so animated, now so silent.

Around us hundreds of bats were flying, in pursuit of the gnats, which infested this spot in great numbers, and annoyed us very much. From time to time we heard overhead the flapping of the wings of the larger species (*pteropus*), which rove at night through this forest in quest of the fruit on which they live. As I listened to them, and saw them occasionally illumined by the flame of a not yet extinguished fire, the stories of the vampire recurred to me, and I could not repress the repugnance I felt for these animals, which are not, however, without some good qualities.

In shape, but for their wings, they somewhat resemble the dog, and cannot be called ugly. These wings are flaccid, oily, and transparent. The English call these creatures flying-foxes—a very appropriate name. They emit a disagreeable odour, and do much mischief to the natives' plantations, who revenge themselves by killing and eating them.

The night was still, and I could hear in the distance the notes of the night birds, which were answered by an owl from the bough of a tree near me. Here and there a few specks of light among the embers, showed that all the fires were not extinguished; and the snoring of my companions intimated to me that they were more fortunate than I. Some of them, however, kept silent watch over our camp. On my left, some-

what apart from the rest, near his fire—the only one which still occasionally emitted sparks of light—I observed the figure of the Corano of Hatam. As I approached he was in the act of shooting an arrow from his bow. Then he stopped, and I imagined he was aiming at some animal with the intention of killing it. Many times he repeated this action, each time resuming his former position, as if lying in wait for something. My curiosity was aroused, and, without wishing him to see me, I was anxious to observe what he was about. I then remarked him making signs, with his hands and movements of the body, advancing and drawing back, stooping and standing upright again, while he repeated the former action with his bow and arrow. He also muttered to himself, or was speaking to some one; but I could neither see a person nor an object. I determined to go nearer, to observe him more closely, and I did so stealthily. He saw me, however, and appeared much displeased at my approach; and to the questions I asked him, by signs rather than by words, for I could scarcely understand one word of his language, he replied, “Settan, Settan” (the spirit of the devil), and he then begged me to return to my post.

I obeyed him, and went back to my fire. I had seen enough to satisfy me that he was under the delusion of witchcraft.

*October 1st.*—This morning, when I opened my eyes, I discerned through the branches of the trees the island of Mansinam. The sky behind it seemed to be on fire, its deep red was reflected in the tranquil sea beneath.

This morning surpassed in beauty any I had yet seen here. I was almost lost in admiration, as I stood gazing on the scene which surrounded me, and which formed so strong a contrast to that of



Wooden Spoons and Pipes, used and made by the Arfaks.

yesterday,—when the Corano came to tell me that we should soon be leaving for Andai, and that I should have only sufficient time for breakfast. Some sweet potatoes and Indian corn were soon prepared; and having partaken of this simple

fare, we started on our road in the order in which we had come.

Crossing a stream, I discovered Beccari's footprints on the sand; and the grains of rice scattered along the path told me that he had left Andai. What a fatality! To have been so near each other, and not to have met! Perhaps he had brought the provisions I had asked for; or was there a famine at Hatam also? Perhaps I might still have remained a month, or even two months, longer on the mountain. How can I describe my feelings! It occurred to me that the Corano had been aware of Beccari's presence in Putat, and that he had maliciously made me take a new road, so that we might not meet. I remember that when the natives informed me, in the first instance, that they did not desire my presence at Hatam, it was alleged that they had received an order from the elders of the tribe, now deceased, not to admit strangers into their village, or, at all events, not to allow them to remain there for more than one month. At that time I did not believe one word of all this; but since then I have felt almost certain that there was some truth in it. Towards 2 p.m. we reached Andai. The missionary came to meet and receive us, the report of the gun I had fired a little while before at a gowra (*Goura coronata*) having announced my return to him. The first words he said to me, after the usual greetings, were, that Beccari had started for Hatam two days before. The only course open to me now was to put my collection in order, and endeavour to join him as soon as possible.

I had already tried, through the missionary, to broach the subject of the treaty with the Corano of Hatam, or with him of Andai, but had not been successful. The one had rejected every proposal, whilst the other tried to dissuade me from advancing, saying to the missionary that the men of Soboe and Morris wished to take our lives, and that, as he knew positively that the same feeling existed at Hatam, he would on no account take the responsibility of leading us into places from which he knew we could not return. He added, that it would also be prudent to write to Beccari to return with all speed from Putat, for that he ran great, although not immediate, risk there. To-morrow morning some of these natives intend to betake themselves to Putat, going by sea as far as the mouth of Putat river, whence they can reach the village. I do not despair of going with them.

*October 2nd.*—The people starting for Putat left this morning. I was unable to persuade them to take me, or even a part of my baggage, with them. The missionary advised me to write to Beccari to tell him all that had happened, and the various rumours afloat. Although I do not believe one word the natives say, and am always suspicious of some double-dealing or hidden plot, yet to ease his mind I wrote to Beccari, telling him all that had happened, not concealing, however, that the prejudices of the natives appeared to me to be yielding.

*October 3rd.*—My two servants, whom I had left behind when I went to the mountain, are now lodged in a small house not far from that of the

missionary. Young Caccion has both legs paralyzed, and is obliged to remain constantly seated or lying down. Mesac has sciatica, and is also suffering from a tumour, which prevents his moving; and my interpreter, David, has gone to the island of Mansinam to see his wife. I charged him to inquire whether it would be possible to organize an expedition to Amberbaki, or the slopes of Arfak.

To-day I have an attack of fever.

*October 4th.*—This morning I have been constructing a small laboratory, in which to use my photographic apparatus; but at midday I was obliged to desist, in consequence of a second and violent attack of fever. David arrived with a letter from the missionary of Mansinam, Mr. Van Hasselt. He said it was difficult to organize an expedition to the mountain-side by sea, because the people of Dorey and Mansinam are hostile to those of Arfak. He thought, however, that at Mansinam I should find some natives who would consent to take me to a given point of the coast of Amberbaki, although not farther, for the people of Mansinam are much afraid of the Karons, who are, they say, cannibals.

*October 5th.*—Last night I had a return of fever; I tried a double dose of the remaining medicine, but it did me no good, it had probably been kept too long. This morning, when I arose, I was swelled as if with dropsy. Up to the present my head had not been attacked by these symptoms, but this morning my eyes were so swollen that I could hardly open them. Nevertheless, I contrived, after dinner, to go as far as the



missionary's house, in order to see what progress David was making in the task I had set him in my photographic laboratory. I found him talking and chatting with the natives, instead of working. The walk, however, was beneficial to me, for it produced a copious perspiration, and by the time I returned to the house I was very much thinner than when I had left it, and my legs felt freer and less heavy. I was able to eat a little rice, the only kind of food I had left. I had not eaten for thirty-six hours.

*October 6th.*—Last night I was unable to sleep, although I had taken two opium pills. This morning I can scarcely stand.

*October 7th.*—To-day my health is somewhat better, and I can work a little. I have received three letters from Beccari, which I here transcribe:—

“*Sunday, September 29th, 1872.*

“*Putat.*

“DEAR D'ALBERTIS,—Yesterday we reached Putat, and I think it probable that in the evening you will have heard a noise which I made with dynamite to let you know you should soon receive some provisions. The day I received your two letters the people of Andai killed a man from Mansinam who was with some people from Soboe, a village near this. It is my opinion that no Andai men will now venture any distance from their own homes, for fear of a reprisal. Only yesterday the others suddenly decided to come, on condition that they might come in numbers. After much discussion, at about five o'clock yesterday we left, twenty in number, men, women,

and children, not counting the dogs or the little pigs which the women carried round their necks. I shall remain here some days, and shall probably go to Hatam, but not to remain. To-day the people of Andai and of Putat are keeping high festival together, for which reason none of them are willing to take you your provisions, of which I enclose a list."

Here follows a list of the things sent me, and then he goes on:—

"The men of Andai will no longer go to Hatam, but those from Putat are willing to do so. From this there is a short road leading to the sea; you have only to cross the country of the Soboe, with whom the Putat are not at present on good terms. If I see that it would be desirable to remain upon these mountains, I will arrange matters so as to have our boat taken to the mouth of the river Putat, by which communication with Andai will be greatly facilitated. Captain Assan would not allow the two invalids to embark. . . . The missionary thought it better to have a small house built for them, and I have left them provisions. I have taken Marcus into my service for some days past; it would have been a serious affair to have been without any one who understood the language of the Mafor. When the men from Andai had left, I should have had great difficulty in making myself understood. Give me news of yourself, if possible. Adieu.

"Yours,

"O. BECCARI."

I make no comment on this letter, which explains and confirms what I have said on previous days. The following is the second letter from Beccari:—

“*Putat, September 30th, 1872.*

“DEAR D’ALBERTIS,—You will say my aid has arrived just in time, like that of the Pisani. At Andai I did not know how things were. I have brought here all the things you asked me for, and to-day people from Putat would have taken them to Hatam. I could not have imagined that you would have taken another road to return to Andai, and I had hoped in any case to have met you on the way. At Andai I have locked up various things you may perhaps require—sugar, tea, &c., and I therefore send you the key. I have brought away what rice there was. We have, however, still much paddy” (rice in the husk), “which has to be cleaned” (the Malays call this operation, *tumbu*), “and David will easily do it. . . . If you have any intention of returning to Hatam, and cannot find people to take you, go to Putat, where there are folk from Andai, and I don’t think it will be difficult to induce them to come. Besides, some men from Andai are to return here in a few days by sea, which is rather a short way. The first bird I ate at Putat was a *Parotia sexpennis*, but I have not preserved its skin. Here, it appears, they preserve the pretty birds.

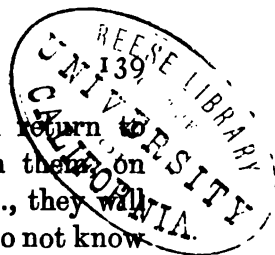
“Farewell. Compliments to the missionaries.

“Yours,

“O. BECCARI.”

The third letter is dated October 5th, and says:—

*Letters from Beccari.*



"To-morrow some men from Andai return to their country; but as they carry with them, on their own account, grain, bananas, &c., they will not take charge of your clothes, and I do not know when I can send them to you. I will do my utmost to let you have the shot and the beads. I do not suppose you will want the other things. I also warn you, in case it should occur to you to come here for any time, that you must not count upon the knives, the rice, or the wine I had brought you; but you will find the powder and the spirit. I do not believe any one wanted to kill me, and think you have been misinformed on this point. The people of Dorei appear to be partisans of the Soboe, for which reason it might be dangerous for you to go among them; the Andai, the Putat, and the Hatam natives being on friendly terms, are therefore enemies of the people of Soboe and Dorei.

"It would appear that my visit here has given them pleasure, and I can get as many men as I want to cut down trees. People from Hatam arrive daily, and my rug cap causes a great sensation. I am not at present thinking of going to Hatam; for some time I have been much occupied. The day after you had passed near Putat I went down the river-bed, and came upon your foot-prints, which convinced me you had returned to Andai.

"My compliments to the missionaries.

"Yours,

"O. BECCARI."

*October 16th.*—This is the first day since the

7th that I have been able to resume my journal. I have passed the interval hovering between life and death, and almost in a state of unconsciousness. For some days the missionary and Beccari—who had been sent for in haste—despaired of my life; but, as it appears, my hour had not come; and, partly owing to my good constitution, partly to the great care taken of me, I am now in a fair way to recover. The fever has robbed me of the small amount of flesh I possessed, and I am reduced to a walking skeleton. My liver and spleen are terribly swollen, which so affects my appearance that when I look in the glass I am horrified at myself. Added to these ailments, I have had jaundice, and my eyes are greenish yellow. To a state of stupor has succeeded a painful wakefulness; I can sleep neither by night nor by day; but I dream constantly, with my eyes open. The action of the heart is greatly accelerated, and I breathe with difficulty. Yet I consider myself to be recovering.

*October 19th.*—At length I have resolved to drag myself out, after twelve days' confinement to the house. My legs almost refused their office. I wandered slowly through the forest for two hours, seeking for insects. The palpitation of my heart prevented my moving as briskly as I could have wished, and I had to be satisfied with only looking at the birds that flew about among the branches of the trees, and the butterflies that fluttered fearlessly around me in all the beauty of their varied hues.

*October 22nd.*—My health is slowly improving, although yesterday and to-day I was attacked



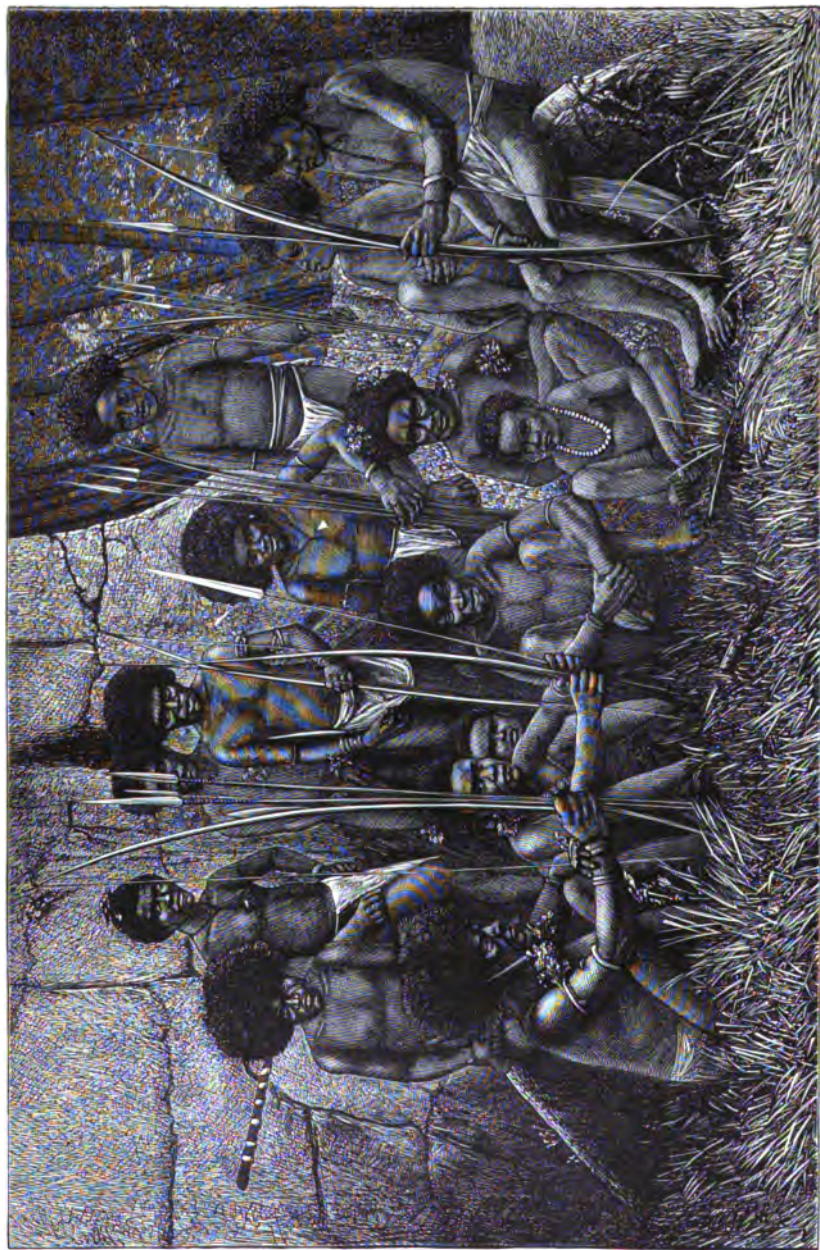
QUAMPAU.

*Vol. I., p. 140.*









ANDAI PEOPLE.

with such violent pains in the stomach that I thought myself dying. Beccari, not knowing how to account for them, nor what remedy to apply, had recourse to chlorodyne, with good results. Beccari advises me to return to Amboyna, as he thinks I shall never get well here. Although reluctantly, I shall follow his advice, and he began to treat to-day with the people of Mansinam for conveying us to Sorong. It is very likely that difficulties may arise from the high price they will demand for the boat and the men we shall require. This morning I was able to work a little with my photographic apparatus, and I took portraits of some of the natives in groups. At first it was quite impossible to persuade them to let me take their portraits; afterwards I was able to conquer their reluctance and fear by numerous gifts, but then arose the difficulty of making them stand still.

*October 23rd.*—This morning I again took two of the pills recommended me by the missionary, and I again suffered from violent pains in the stomach; which strengthened my suspicion that they contained some deleterious ingredient, and, to avoid further risk, I threw away the pills and the box. We shall see if I have guessed rightly. Otherwise my health is visibly improving, and the palpitation is much diminished.

*October 26th.*—This morning I worked for a long time at my photography, and I took several portraits and some groups of the people of Mansinam, Andai, and Arfak.

I tried five or six times to take a portrait of the daughter of the Corano of Hatam, the fair albino—the beautiful Eve of these forests; but it

was impossible to get her to stand still. First a fly settled on her face, she raised her hand to brush it away, and the portrait was spoilt; then some other insect came to annoy her, and she scratched her head; the third time it struck her that she was insufficiently covered, and she strove to arrange the one scanty garment which she wore. I made two more ineffectual attempts, and then gave up all hope of succeeding. My health is visibly improving, and, were it not for the fear of again becoming a burden on Beccari, I should be tempted to remain here, and continue my labours.

Beccari has been for some days at Mansinam or Dorey, and I fear that when he returns it may be to depart from this spot. Oh! were it not for the apprehension of being an incumbrance to him, I should certainly remain here. But it is right that I should leave Beccari free, and if my health is re-established, New Guinea is a large place, and I shall be able to return. The dropsy in my legs still causes me great discomfort.

*October 28th.*—I have worked again at photography, but without very good results; perhaps because I am drowsy from opium, and much slower than usual, I cannot obtain the likenesses of my black sitters

*October 29th.*—Yesterday one of the natives died, it was said from having eaten poisonous beans. To-day I saw him buried. The corpse was wrapped in a mat, and let down in a perpendicular position into a horizontal hole, forming an angle with that into which it was lowered. Then the tomb was closed, and covered with earth. Some women pressed round it, crying and

lamenting, but the men appeared to be quite indifferent. The missionary tells me this man was the first who had died a natural death, if you can so call it, during the last four years, whilst in the same space of time no less than thirty women have died. It appears the women very frequently fall victims to the means which they take to procure abortion.

Beccari has arrived; he has succeeded in freighting a boat for Sorong, and in two or three days it will be here to be loaded. Van Hasselt's family (the missionary of Mansinam) have arrived with Beccari.

*October 1st.*—Yesterday and to-day I was able to go out shooting, and I killed some beautiful birds, including several birds of paradise, and these I prepared. My health is improving daily, and yet it is with great regret that I see the hour of departure approaching.

*November 1st.*—This morning I took a walk in the forest. I had gone but a short distance from the house when I heard the voices of the Papuans, singing, as they always do when they arrive at an inhabited spot, in one of their large praus. These voices went to my heart like a dagger. Although I was already certain I should have to depart, I had been flattering myself with the hope that some unforeseen circumstance might arise to delay our departure; but on hearing those voices I knew that the fatal hour had struck. I returned to the house to prepare the few birds I had obtained, among which was a magnificent and very large hawk (*Harpyopsis novæ-guinææ*, *n. gen. et n. sp.*). Then I helped to pack our luggage.

*November 2nd.*—At half-past two we took leave of the missionary and his people. Our farewells were very cordial, and many were the last words we found to say, as we warmly shook hands with him.

I gave one last look at our little house, bidding it adieu. How much I had suffered there! and yet it had become dear to me.

The deafening sound of the gong, and the song of our oarsmen, roused me quickly from my meditations, and hard rowing took us swiftly down the stream of Andai. The banks seemed to be flying from us, and we soon lost sight of our little house, and then of a large tree which grows in the midst of the native plantation—a colossal tree, which I never can forget. The gong continued to sound in my ears with the song of the Papuans. All seemed to be rejoicing in my sorrow.

We were soon on the sea, and we steered for Mansinam. How often I wished myself back, and gazing on the mountain tops of Arfak! In the afternoon we reached Mansinam, and were received by Mr. and Mrs. Van Hasselt with their usual courtesy. How grateful we felt for a little interval of European life—for good beds and good cooking—only those who have lived as we had recently been living could understand.

*November 5th.*—The people of Mansinam are proud and independent, and they seem to have formed an erroneous judgment of white men. As yet they have only had to deal with missionaries, who, from timidity or evangelical meekness, often allow themselves to be imposed upon. These natives, therefore, probably imagined that what

they had found practicable in one case would prove equally so in all others. They also thought, perhaps, that we—strangers in their country—should do as they did. To-day they will have learnt they were mistaken—that two resolute white men will fearlessly assert their rights, even although they are surrounded by a population of three or four hundred natives opposed to them.

The lesson has been taught them in this way.

The men who were to have rowed us to Sorong had, at their own request, been paid in advance for their services with bars of iron and other things. But neither yesterday nor to-day did those who were to have come with us make their appearance, and we were told they were hiding, or had run away. We said, since they were unwilling to accompany us they might remain behind; but then we demanded that what we had paid them in advance should be returned. This did not appear to give satisfaction; they preferred staying at home, and keeping what they had received. It was in vain the missionary endeavoured to persuade the chiefs to order restitution of what we had given to be made. At last Beccari lost patience, and he determined to obtain by force what the missionary had in vain sought to make these men do voluntarily. Taking two of our men with him, he went up to the native village. The houses are built on wooden piles driven into the sea, and approached by a bridge constructed of the trunks of small trees.

Beccari demanded from the chief the restoration of the things we had given the deserters as payment in advance, and, not receiving a satisfactory

answer from him, he determined to go into the house and forcibly possess himself of our property. No sooner said than done. I kept guard at one end of the bridge, armed with my revolver, whilst Beccari entered the chief's house. The women and children were so frightened that they ran into the sea to escape, and thus left the coast clear for Beccari, who reappeared in a short space of time, laden with several bars of iron, the property of the chief, who tried to oppose him, but was obliged to give way.

Our two men carried the booty, and we all returned to the missionary's house. The chief followed us, with some other natives, and on their arrival he complained bitterly of what we had done, and was unwilling to admit himself responsible for his subjects' conduct. At length, finding Beccari was determined to have back his own, or to keep that which was the chief's, the latter individual went to try and obtain the restitution of our property. He soon returned with it, and received his own in exchange.

The natives had witnessed this scene with great astonishment; it was quite a new experience to them, and one they will no doubt remember, to the advantage of future travellers. In the end, the chief promised to replace the deserters, and we are in hopes we shall get away to-morrow.

*November 7th.*—This morning we were at last ready to start, and at half-past seven, having warmly thanked our hospitable friends, Mr. Van Hasselt and his amiable wife, we embarked in the boat that was to take us to Sorong.

We touched at Dorey, to lay in a store of good

drinking-water, and we were detained there, by a heavy shower and the want of wind. Towards evening the sky cleared, and a gentle breeze sprang up, so that we were able to set sail. In the night I was again attacked with intermittent fever.

*November 15th.*—During the last few days, my health having been tolerably good, I was able, under the guidance of our oarsmen, to make daily excursions on land for the purpose of adding to my collection.

On the 13th, after passing Amsterdam Island, we arrived opposite a tall conical-shaped rock; and, on seeing it, our Papuans seized their bows, and let fly a number of arrows in that direction, uttering wild cries. This was in fulfilment of one of their superstitious rites.

In the evening, so violent a storm arose that, for a time, we were threatened with destruction. Frightful waves tossed our fragile bark to and fro, and seemed each moment likely to engulf it, giving our men an opportunity of displaying their skill as sailors. Exerting all their strength and dexterity, they managed the boat, although under a drenching rain, and with a fierce wind and tempestuous sea, succeeding in keeping clear of the coast upon which the waves seemed resolved to cast us, and where we were almost sure to dash upon a rock.

Thanks to the men's skill, we were saved.

Towards half-past eight the sky became almost clear, and—quite a novelty to me, as well, I think, as to all on board—a magnificent rainbow, of vivid green, yellow, and orange, appeared in the heavens.



For more than half an hour we observed this imposing nocturnal phenomenon.

At half-past nine we rounded Cape Spencer, and entered the strait formed by the coast of New Guinea, and many small islands. At this station we expected a boat from Amboyna, which was to bring us provisions, and see how we had fared; but we did not hope to find it awaiting us. It would therefore be easier to imagine than to describe the sensations I experienced when, peering about the bay, despite the darkness, I perceived the masts of a vessel. But our wonder increased when, a little farther on, we discovered the rigging of a large schooner. How long it seemed before we reached the spot where she was anchored! At length we came up to her, and ascertained that she was a German vessel, and had come here in search of mother-of-pearl, trepang, and tortoise-shell. The ship's name is "Franz," and the name of the captain, a German, is Redlich.

The other vessel is a small schooner, sent by our friend, Captain Kraal. Great was our joy at getting our letters; for nine months we had not received any. A further surprise was in store for us: it was to hear that, on the 1st of December, an Italian man-of-war was expected at Amboyna. So said a letter from the consul at Singapore, and also another from Captain Kraal. We learnt, in addition, that the arrival of the Dutch steamer, "Dasson," bringing us letters, was momentarily expected.

*November 16th.*—The emotion I experienced yesterday, and having sat up late to read my

letters, brought on an attack of fever, and I was consequently obliged to remain in the house—in our former house here at Sorong, where we found the things that had been left for us all in order. Our servant, Ismail, is, however, much reduced by fever.

*November 19th.*—We are still expecting the “Dasson,” which has arrived at Salwattee, they say. In the meantime, we are working hard to have our luggage ready.

*November 20th.*—It is quite certain the “Dasson” is at Salwattee, and we have not yet decided whether to await it here, or go to meet it. All our baggage is now on board our small schooner.

*November 21st.*—This is the anniversary of my birthday, and also of Beccari’s. We rose early, although we had retired to rest very late; but, having decided on starting to-day, it was necessary to work hard in order to be ready. The captain of our schooner, who had gone to Salwattee to get information about the “Dasson,” returned about midnight, and brought letters which had come by the “Dasson.” Now we can go when we please.

At midday we took leave of our friends at Sorong, and went on board our boat, but there was not wind enough for us to sail.

To celebrate our common birthday we had a better dinner than usual, if we may dignify our humble repast with the name of dinner. On this occasion we allowed ourselves to neglect economy; and, with two bottles of good Bordeaux, we did honour to Bacchus. Captain Redlich, having heard of the festival we were

keeping, came on board, and brought two bottles of excellent champagne, and we concluded the entertainment by drinking to the health of our absent friends at home.

Several months before I had paid sixteen dollars for my canoe, after bargaining for it. The natives, hoping I should have left it behind, and they would, consequently, get it for nothing, refused to give me for it the skin of a bird of paradise, which is generally sold for two dollars. They were, however, disappointed; for, as we were still becalmed, and at anchor, my boat was set on fire, and cast adrift on the water, which it illumined for a time, and then, by means of a small charge of dynamite, and a little gunpowder, it was blown up into the air, amid the hurrahs of the sailors, who had taken part in the celebration of our birthday feast.

Towards midnight the wind changed; and, whilst the anchor was being weighed, we took leave of Captain Redlich, with mutual good wishes, and hopes of meeting again on some other part of the globe. This meeting, as will be seen, was destined soon to take place.





OUBINGAI.

*Vol. I., p. 161.*

## CHAPTER IX.

The "Dasson"—A beautiful prospect—Poetical ideas and short commons—Sufferings from heat and hunger—Messac's illness and death—A contrary wind—The "Vittor Pisani"—Count Lovera—A kind reception—The Dutch in New Guinea—We land at Dulan—The forest—The road—The raja—Arru Island—Dobbo, its features and importance—A happy man.

*November 22nd.*—After we had left Sorong the wind freshened, and at seven o'clock this morning we arrived in the Salwattee roads. There we found the "Dasson" anchored, and also a brig which followed her, laden with coal. The sky was cloudy and watery, and the sea was rough. I was obliged to lie still until the captain decided to cast anchor, very close to land. In the afternoon it was calm, and I went on deck to breathe the fresh air. We were soon besieged by the natives, who came to sell the mutilated skins of some birds of paradise, for which they asked a high price, demanding more for a certain species than the price current at Singapore. *Cicinnurus regius* they have in hundreds, also numerous skins of *Paradisea minor*, some *Ptiloris magnificus*, and some, in a bad condition, of the *Seleucides albus*. Perhaps the best skin they had, and the best preserved, was that of a *Dasyptilus pesquetii*, which I bought for two dollars.

*November 23rd.*—This morning, although the sun had not yet appeared on the horizon, the sky was all gold and red. The stormy weather yesterday has been followed by the most perfect calm. The sea was tranquil, and its surface was smooth, and as transparent as crystal. Towards the east, on a golden background, rose in dark outlines the indented coast of New Guinea, and the numerous islands, which, from their close vicinity to each other, seem to be all in one, to enclose a large portion of the sea in a semi-circle, and then stretch out far away to the mountains of Waygen in the west. Near us the houses of the village, and the cocoa-nut trees, were mirrored in the clear and tranquil water. The sky was of a bright blue, with only a few white clouds in the distance, tinged by the first rays of the sun with gold.

All around were fish making such wonderful jumps out of the sea that, as I watched them, I fancied that, in thus momentarily leaving their native element, they too wished to enjoy the beautiful spectacles of nature. Seldom in the course of my life have I beheld a more lovely or impressive scene, and never before had I wished so much to be a poet or an artist. I was enraptured with the beauties of nature before me; and I asked myself wonderingly, "Why is it that scenes so lovely, where perpetual summer seems to reign, where Nature has been so prodigal of her gifts, and on which winter never lays her pale, cold hand, should be so unhealthy as to be almost uninhabitable by white men, who, from their superior intelligence, are better calculated to appreciate them than are these semi-barbarian

natives, who know not how to profit by the prodigality of nature in these wondrous lands?" It seems like a satire upon human destiny to find so beautiful a spot so deserted, when millions of intelligent and industrious men are struggling daily in countries which nature has left so barren. How happy and easy life might be in these regions, and how hard it is to those who live and labour in countries of frost and snow. Here is abundance: there is scarcity. Here is a splendid and tranquil waste: there are striving and squalid crowds.

I was musing thus when Beccari, who had been on board the "*Dasson*," approached me with the unwelcome news that she had brought no provisions for us—which meant that during our voyage to Amboyna we should have nothing but rice to eat, for at Sorong we had been able to get only one or two fowls.

However, weather permitting, in four or five days we shall arrive in port. We are now so well used to privation, that a few days more or less of it does not make much difference. It appears that the Dutch authorities, suspecting that we were emissaries of the Italian Government, and fearing, perhaps, that we should carry away with us some portion of New Guinea, had commissioned the "*Dasson*" to visit every point of the coast where we had been, to ascertain if they were still in their respective places. It also appeared that the "*Dasson*" was charged to plant the Dutch flag in those spots which seemed most likely to be visited in future by strangers, and to distribute flags bearing the Dutch arms in the villages.



*November 24th.*—At the break of day we reached Pitt Straits, where, for want of wind, we remained until evening, when we directed our course towards the island of Mysol.

*December 1st.*—If the wind had been favourable to-day, we should have arrived at Amboyna; but, owing to the calm, we made but little way, the current driving us to the west, and we have now been three days in view of the island of Ceram without being able to reach it. During the day a storm arose, and we had wind enough to enable us to advance a few miles, when we were again becalmed, and during the night the current carried us still further out. It would be impossible to describe what we have to endure. Under a burning, tropical sun, without any shade, and in a complete calm, we are hardly able to breathe in the oppressive heat. Not having an awning to protect us from the burning rays of the sun, we are compelled to remain all day in the little hole which serves as a cabin, but which might more properly be termed an oven. The ceiling is so low that we can hardly stand upright.

Here, at midday, we suffer almost torture, and it is only at night we find a little relief; but then there is such a heavy fall of dew that we cannot sleep on deck. We have nothing to eat but rice and biscuits, and in our indifferent state of health such food is ill suited to us. Mesac and I are suffering especially, although he has appeared to be gaining strength latterly.

*December 3rd.*—During the last twenty-four hours I have had three of the most severe attacks

of fever I have yet known. Mesac, who to-day was unable to see me, says he feels as if he were dying. Yesterday he seemed a little better, and I could see him, from my cabin, leaning on the arm of one of the sailors, and gazing with a melancholy smile in the direction of his home. Perhaps I was not mistaken when I fancied I could read on his wasted and pallid face the hope of once more seeing those dear to him—a hope he had perhaps previously abandoned. The sight of his native land came to him like a voice crying, “Hope! hope!”

*December 4th.*—This morning we sighted Amboyna, and with a favourable wind we might have been in port in two hours’ time; but the current drove us away. Poor Mesac! After five months’ suffering from a cruel malady, just as his strength seemed returning, and he is in sight of his native country, he is doomed to die! To die on the very eve of the day when he hoped to be united to a loving and beloved family, where the most tender care and every comfort awaited him! Fate was cruel indeed to poor Mesac!

The wind continues contrary, and every day the story of disappointed hopes repeats itself, and every day we endure the same torture. My health declines hourly; I am extremely weak, and, as at Andai, jaundice is appearing.

*December 5th.*—Time seems to be mocking us, for to-day we are farther from Amboyna than we were yesterday.

This day, from my cabin—for I had not strength enough to stand on deck—I assisted at the ceremony of committing to the deep the mortal

remains of poor Mesac. His companions had wrapped him in a sail, and, having recited some prayers over him, they lowered him into the sea. The sound of the fall into the water went to my heart, and I murmured to myself, "Poor, poor Mesac!" and then the thought came—his turn to-day; to-morrow, perhaps, mine! I felt that if this voyage is to last three days longer, I shall follow him.

*December 7th.*—Early this morning a tempest arose, with the wind in our favour, which drove us to the entrance of the bay of Amboyna. The storm abated, and again we were becalmed. Farewell, then, for this day, to the hope of reaching Amboyna! Almost despairing of ever getting there, my strength failing rapidly, and feeling that I was unequal to bear a prolongation of the sufferings of the days we had lately passed through, I retired to my cabin, thinking that the same destiny which had befallen poor Mesac was now awaiting me. But it was not so written in the Book of Fate.

The flag flying at our masthead was seen and recognized by the watch on board the Italian man-of-war, the "Vittor Pisani," the arrival of which had been previously announced to us. The captain, Count Lovera di Maria, immediately put up steam, and came to meet us. At that moment he appeared to me more like a guardian angel than a man; for, thanks to him, I might still hope to live; thanks to him, I was rescued from our schooner, where a sojourn of two or three days longer would certainly have been death to me! The captain, with the courtesy

natural to him, came on board, and at once took us to his own vessel. How can I describe the tumult of ideas and feelings which agitated me when, carried in the arms of the sailors to the deck of the vessel, I found myself surrounded by my countrymen, and, as it were, once more on Italian ground? How handsome the sailors of the "Vittor Pisani" appeared to me! I was at once placed under the care of the skilful Dr. Fornari; and now I have everything to hope from his skill, the virtue of his remedies, and my own good fortune. From the welcome accorded me by Captain Lovera, his officers, and the doctor, I feel quite satisfied that everything will be done for me that my condition requires.

Such was the assiduous care taken of me on board the "Vittor Pisani," and the effect of a suitable and regular diet, that I found myself in a few days restored from death to life, and on the fourth day after my arrival at Amboyna I felt strong enough to go on shore, to thank Captain Kraal and his amiable wife for all the kindness they had shown me. In a consultation held by the doctors on board and Doctor Sötke, it was decided that, to ensure my recovery, I must leave tropical climates for some time.

The "Vittor Pisani" was to go to the islands of Ki and Arru, and then her captain intended to touch at some point of New Guinea, previous to going to Sydney, from whence she would proceed on her voyage of circumnavigation. Count Lovera, with the greatest kindness, offered me a passage on board his ship, in the event of my

not wishing to wait a month for the mail-boat in which I had come from Singapore and Java.

I gathered strength from the hope of visiting new and interesting countries, and of again seeing some parts of New Guinea, particularly Outanata, that place from which contrary winds had driven us when Doctor Beccari and I were together. These reasons—to which was added my great desire of increasing my collection—led me joyfully to accept Count Lovera's offer. Beccari had formed plans on his own account, and wished to remain at Amboyna to put them into execution.

On the 12th of December the "Vittor Pisani" weighed anchor, and, leaving Amboyna, directed her course towards Saparua, to take in provisions.

On the morning of the 14th, at half-past seven o'clock, we set sail and followed the coast-line south of Amboyna. On board a small cutter which followed the ship were Doctor Beccari, Captain Kraal, and his wife, who had arranged to accompany us so far on our journey.

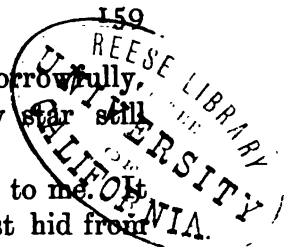
Beccari remained behind to continue the exploration, while I was obliged to give it up just as it had become most interesting to me. It was with infinite regret that I separated from him whom I might call my master. I felt the greatest faith in his good luck, and before parting I told him so. On the other hand, should misfortune be in store for him, I should much regret not being by his side to share it with him. The state of my health, however, was such that, had I remained with him, it would have made me rather an impediment than an advantage to him.

"Farewell, then!" I exclaimed sorrowfully.  
"Farewell, Beccari! May your lucky star still guide you!"

The 15th and 16th were trying days to me. It rained frequently, and the mist almost hid from us the island of Banda, for which we were making.

*December 17th.*—In the hope of obtaining information concerning New Guinea, and especially Outanata, the commander decided on landing at the Ke Islands. He was also desirous of obtaining, if possible, a pilot and an interpreter. Early this morning we sighted the large island of Ki, which the natives call by the Malay name, Ki Besar, and which is recognizable by its lofty chain of mountains. There was so heavy a mist off shore, that we had to use the utmost caution in approaching the smaller island of Ke (Ke Kucil), and, finally, we cast anchor at a short distance from a village called Dulan. Shortly after our arrival, the sound of the gongs apprised us that some praus were coming alongside; and presently we observed one, pulled by twelve oars, and adorned with many flags, after the Malay fashion. As it advanced towards us with great rapidity, we observed a larger flag among the small ones—that of Holland.

Seated in the middle of the prau was an old man, strangely attired, and surrounded by persons who seemed to form his suite. When the prau came alongside, the commander invited the old man and his attendants to come on board, and they hastened to accept the invitation. The old man introduced himself as the rajah, and was



accompanied by an iman, or Mussulman priest. As I could speak a little Malay, the commander requested me to act as interpreter, and thus be a witness to all that was said and done. When the poor old man had entered the commander's cabin, his first care was to present the Dutch patent by which he was invested with the rank of raja; and, as if even this did not suffice to prove his authority, he displayed a silver-headed cane, on which were engraved the arms of Holland. Nor did the title of Dutchman seem to him a sufficient patent of nobility; he would also have the count to know that formerly he had been an independent sovereign, and that his dominions had extended as far as the Arru Islands. I observed, nevertheless, that the poor old fellow trembled like a leaf. Now, why should he be so full of fear? One reason might be that the crews of the Dutch fleet, which visits these countries every year, generally treat the people with severity. But this severity, perhaps only apparent, may be but a political means of keeping them in at least nominal subjection; they are, in fact, independent. Their only obligation towards Holland consists in hoisting the Dutch flag on the arrival of a man-of-war, and that on solemn occasions the chiefs should be provided with the aforesaid silver-headed stick.

Such was the state of terror of this raja and his iman, that it was next to impossible to obtain a rational answer to the questions I put to them by the commander's directions. That they might run no risk of vexing him, they had made up their minds to answer in every case: "Ja, tuan" (Yes,

sir), even when they ought to have replied with the plainest No. But on the whole, both the raja and the iman are intelligent and interesting old men.

After they had taken leave of the Count, they went over the ship, and especially admired the big guns, at the same time showing the greatest interest in the fire-arms, the revolvers, and the swords. These men were dressed like Malays. They are Mussulmans, and, contrary to my expectations, faithful to the teaching of the Koran, which they proved by declining to drink the wine or other alcoholic beverages offered them by the commander.

*December 18th.*—To-day I went on shore with the captain and his officers, to return the raja's visit. We landed at the village of Dulan. A stone jetty projects into the sea; without this it would be very difficult to land, on account of the coral reefs, which, in a thousand shapes and as many different colours, surround this island with as it were a jewelled ring. A crowd of people in the bright-coloured Malay costume, awaited us on the jetty. Conspicuous among them were the raja, the iman, and an Arab of colossal stature in an oriental dress of rich silk.

A few paces from the shore was a tent, upon which was hoisted the Dutch flag. This tent was intended to serve as a reception-hall, and was hung inside and out with draperies of red, white, and yellow. A table and a few chairs composed the furniture. We were invited to enter. The captain was seated at the right hand of the raja, at the farther end of the hall.



The crowd occupied the remaining space, or stood round the entrance. The Arab, who had better manners and was more polished than the rest, replied very politely to the questions put to him by the Count. The latter was offered coffee and some excellent cigars before he left. Who this Arab may be, I cannot positively say; but I believe him to be either a pirate, or a dealer in slaves. He says he has come here solely for the purpose of having a large boat built, as the people of Dulau are famous for their skill in building strong and durable boats, and they sell them at a very low price. In spite of these assertions, I am still of opinion that he is a slave merchant; for his house, which is very large, is full of women, and children of both sexes, whom we could see peeping out of the grated windows, watching us as curiously as we were gazing at them.

Although the traffic in slaves has not assumed here the proportions which it has attained in other parts of Africa, it is sufficiently active to call for the attention of European governments, as it numbers many victims every year. The Dutch, who claim to be the masters of this territory, ought surely, for the honour of civilization, to be foremost in putting down the slave-trade here—unless, indeed, they tolerate it from policy, as a means of keeping in subjection the chiefs who carry on that infamous traffic. If the inhabitants along the coast of New Guinea, from Sorong to the straits of Dourga, have such an aversion to strangers, it may fairly, I think, be accounted for by the fact that for centuries past they have been exposed to the incursions and rapine of the rajas,

who are dependent on the Sultan of Tidor and the Dutch. Who does not know that there are slave markets in Ternate, in Misor, in Timor, in Ke, and in Arru? If the negroes of Africa inspire so much interest, why should those of New Guinea be forgotten? The Dutch government and the officers of the Dutch navy, who officially visit Arru, Goram, Ceram, Ke, and many of the islands which form archipelagoes in the west of New Guinea, ought not to ignore what every one who visits these islands sees clearly.

One object of our going on land was to buy a quantity of firewood for the steam engine, in order to save coal. The raja promised to provide the quantity we desired at a fixed price. When this business was settled, we visited some poor plantations, and some houses, whose order and neatness we admired. In the latter was some European furniture. The natives trade a little in cocoa-nut oil, mother-of-pearl, tripang, and swallows' nests. Boughis and Chinese merchants visit these countries from time to time, and buy what the people have collected in the course of the year.

*December 19th.*—To-day I have been again to Dulau, with two of the ship's officers, hoping to have a little sport. We were received by the raja, and by another Arab, who had not shown himself previously. Yesterday the raja promised to give the captain a pilot, in order to visit the Arru islands; to-day he made several pretexts for not complying with our request. As I was longing for an excursion into the interior of the island, I put off business, and, accompanied by some natives, I went

into the forest. I make use of the word forest, although the vegetation there hardly deserves the name, especially when compared with that of New Guinea.

The road, which is rendered difficult by roots, is composed of pure coral, but it is split in so many places that it is almost dangerous to walk on a surface so rough and unequal. The hollows and the clefts of the rocks are filled up with fragments of stones, and trees have taken root there. From the result of our sport, I should say the island is scantily supplied with birds; the few I shot were all well known to me, as I had already found the same species in New Guinea.

We were surprised at the number of large monitors, which fled before us at every step, and took refuge in the trees. On our return to the village we visited the interior of other houses, where we found some European pottery and Chinese porcelain, and some glass and crystals. The houses are well built of wood, and covered with palm leaves, and most of them are surrounded by a wall made of coral, and without mortar. These walls are generally of the height of a man. Coconut and banana trees abound. We were astonished to see a great many small bronze guns, some of them, apparently very ancient and curiously wrought, were worthy of a place in a museum. Others, less ancient, were of heavier calibre; the oldest might have been antique Portuguese guns.

We also saw boats of different forms and sizes in course of construction. Iron is rarely used in boat-building, and strong splinters of hard wood are employed instead of nails.

We met two women dressed in Malay fashion, who, when they saw us, fled quickly; but some girls about eight or ten years old, stark naked, drew near us, and did not run away until they perceived they were the objects of our curiosity, as we were of theirs. They appeared to be pure Papuans; and as they were naked, while others of Malay type were clothed, we supposed them to be slaves.

On returning to the raja, I found he did not want to give us either the promised wood or the pilot. As I had yesterday assured the Count, in my capacity as interpreter, that everything should be done according to his wishes, it seemed to me that my honour was compromised by the raja's breach of faith, I therefore said to him resolutely, "If, early to-morrow, all the wood is not ready to be measured and paid for, half-a-dozen discharges from that large gun you admired so much will quickly make you and your people repent of not having obeyed the captain's orders. As to the pilot you have promised, if he is not forthcoming we will land, and carry off ten instead of one."

Poor raja! My words so alarmed him that in less than half an hour thirty men were sent into the forest to cut the required wood; and no further difficulty was made about the pilot.

*December 20th.* — This morning we visited another village, upon a little island opposite Dulan. There also the natives were very civil. They cultivate Indian corn, make oil from the cocoa-nut, and build ships, as they do at Dulan. They have spears, and bows and arrows, tipped

with iron. I remarked that they had spoons made of fine conch shells, prettily wrought and elegant in form. They also wear shell bracelets. They polish the shells with sand. Here, as at Dulan, they are provided with European articles—that is to say, knives, domestic utensils, linen, &c. In exchanging any articles of commerce, they prefer money, especially silver dollars. A dollar they call “ringhit.” Although Mussulmans, they have no mosques: it seems that to have a mosque and an iman is the privilege of Dulan. Here also they mostly get their living by fishing, their habits are the same in every way as those of the natives of Dulan, and they are a mixed race, the Papuan or Malay type being more or less distinct.

We returned on board our vessel at about twelve, and were ready to set sail for Arru island, passing by Dobbo, for which we obtained a pilot here. Although the “Vittor Pisani” remained but a short time in these waters, the time was not without good results, for the officers completed some interesting hydrographical work. I, indeed, had to bear the disappointment of being unable to take advantage of the time we passed there.

*December 21st.*—In about twenty-four hours we accomplished the crossing from Ke island to Arru island, and to-day, at half-past two, we cast anchor about a mile and a half from Dobbo, the most important point of these islands for trade. It is also remarkable for the fair which takes place there every year, and which is resorted to by Arabs, Malays, Boughis, and even Chinese. Soon after our arrival, we were met by two praus, in which were the chiefs of the country, the Oranhay and

the Orantua of Wammar and Wakan, two of the principal villages in the bay of Dobbo. With them were several others, who called themselves schoolmasters. According to the custom of the country, their arrival was announced by the sweet music of the gongs.

They were received by the captain, I again acting as interpreter. They trembled as they gave their names and rank, and responded as briefly as possible to the questions I asked in the captain's name.

Amongst other things they told us a Dutch man-of-war visits Dobbo every year, and they are therefore now no longer persecuted by pirates, as they were a few years ago. They state that they possess slaves, but assure us that they bought them in the island of Goram. They say they never make incursions on the coast of New Guinea to procure slaves for their own use or for the purposes of trade, and that they have no intercourse with the natives. They also wanted to persuade us that the inhabitants of New Guinea are cannibals. They hesitated considerably in giving us this information, and contradicted themselves frequently. Notwithstanding their declarations, I asked, in the captain's name, for a pilot and an interpreter to go with us to Outanata, and, after much hesitation, I obtained a promise of both.

After their visit we landed to visit Dobbo, situated on a slip of land which divides what may be called the bay of Dobbo nearly in the centre. The village is composed of two long rows of wooden houses, covered with palm-leaves.

An old man of Malay type received us courteously, introducing himself as the Orantua of the country. He was accompanied by two Chinamen whose faces had the cadaverous hue of dead rather than of living men, and who wore the dress and long pigtaails customary with these people.

Dobbo, at this season, is a desert. The great bazaar, where people from all parts of the world assemble in the month of February, is now silent, and almost deserted, and does not contain more than ten or twelve inhabitants, who are for the most part old and infirm, and remain there to take charge of the empty houses. Accompanied by the Orantua and the Chinamen, we walked through the principal street, which traverses the entire length of the village, without meeting a living creature, except a few hens and cats, which ran away so soon as they saw us, as the women and children had done in the other villages.

The white man must indeed be an ugly animal, since he excites so much fear in others! The worthy Orantua explained to us that, so soon as the fair is over, all the people emigrate to different parts of the island, to fish for tripang and mother-of-pearl, the most important articles of export in this country. The feathers of the birds of paradise also form a considerable part of the trade; although the only skins of any real value are those of the *Paradisea apoda*.

The Chinamen told us that these people transact business with money—rupees and dollars being well-known coins—and by exchange. European articles, especially cotton goods, pottery and arms,

are common and cheap. Elephants' teeth also seem to be regarded as articles of import. After having given us these details, they offered to sell us some skins of the bird of paradise, very badly prepared by the natives, but for which they asked a high price. The Orantua told us he was busy, preparing the houses for next season.

*December 22nd.*—The captain went on shore early this morning, intending to visit the village of Wammar. I was glad to accompany him, especially as, in order to reach the village, we had to cross a forest, where we hoped for some shooting. The pilot, whom we had taken with us from Dulan, was to have acted as our guide, but shortly after we entered the forest he disappeared, and it was impossible to find him. Having been paid beforehand, he probably ran away so as not to be obliged to work out his time on board ship, where he seemed to remain unwillingly, although well treated. Thus we found ourselves in the midst of a forest of mangroves without a guide, and had to wander aimlessly for some hours before we were fortunate enough to regain the right path.

On our return to the ship, we found the Orankay of Wakan waiting for us. He informed us they were unable to give us either interpreter or pilot, notwithstanding the promises made the day before. This irritated the captain somewhat, and he suggested that perhaps I had not duly fulfilled my office of interpreter. I was a little offended in my turn, and I asked leave to speak to the Orankay in my own way, instead of translating the captain's words,



assuring Count Lovera that if he allowed this, I should obtain both pilot and interpreter. Leave was granted, and, at the same time, the men were dismissed the captain's presence. Then I assumed an air of importance, and informed the poor Orankay that he and his companions were our prisoners until they should have furnished us with a pilot and an interpreter. They did not believe me, and said it was impossible to procure either one or the other; but after two hours' imprisonment on board, they thought it better to accede to the captain's request, and asked leave for one to go on shore to find the men we wanted. Even then I did not allow the chiefs to land, but sent the schoolmaster, a half-breed—half Malay, half Portuguese—who offered to give us one of his slaves, a native of Papua, for fifteen dollars, we binding ourselves to give him back at the end of the journey. He promised to obtain a guide to the village of Battulei, on the Blakangtana, in the north of Arru island, from Ogir, another village, distant three or four miles from Wakau.

All that the schoolmaster promised was fulfilled. This evening he came on board, accompanied by two pilots instead of one, and by a poor, worn-out, old slave. The Orankay were now free to go on shore; and they departed, after having kissed hands and beaten their breasts, according to Mahometan custom. The name of the poor slave brought on board is Ciaccia; he is a Papuan, and has curly black hair, and rather regular features. On the whole, his physiognomy is pleasing. He is thin, and seems

hungry—perhaps he is accustomed to such a state of things. When he came on board he was as naked as when he entered the world; some clothes were therefore given him, and after he had had a bath we made him dress. Poor Ciaccia! how frightened he was! When he was fully dressed, however, he looked pleased with himself; and when his hunger was satisfied, even fear could not prevent a smile of contentment. He devoured all he could get, only showing a little hesitation when a glass of wine was offered him. This he refused to drink until the man who held it had tasted it first. Afterwards, he lay down on a mattress and lighted a good cigar, with great apparent enjoyment. From time to time he looked at us as though he would say, “What good fortune for a poor, naked, hungry creature such as I, to be suddenly changed into a prince—well dressed, well fed, and well served! What can these people with whom I am brought in contact want, that every one wishes to see me, and speak to me, and make me presents?” He looked at us as if uncertain whether he was awake or dreaming, and, probably from the effect of the wine and the strong cigar, he shut his eyes and began to snore, like the happiest animal breathing. We left him alone—dreaming perhaps of the bliss of hunger satisfied, and the comfort of a good bed. If he was of a reflective turn of mind, he might be astonished at the caprice of fortune. Happy the man who is not so—who does not torment himself with speculations on the future!

## CHAPTER X.

Battulei — A coral reef — Birds — Fruit-trees — Skulls — Treatment of the dead—Chinamen—Trade—Native customs—A mountain range—Ciaccia's home-sickness—The island of Ropo-ropo—Effect of music—Port Vittor Pisani —Native dress and ornaments.

*December 23rd.*—We weighed anchor at half-past nine. Instead of one pilot, we have three, and between them they ought to take us on as far as Battulei. The officers made out different parts of the shore, correcting the inaccuracies of the chart as we went along. Navigation in these waters is a serious matter for a ship like ours, on account of the numerous coral reefs. Owing to our captain's care, however, and the pilot's skill—they showed themselves well-acquainted with these parts—we did not meet with any mishap. For the night we cast anchor near an island called, by our pilot, Noba.

*December 24th.*—This morning we continued our way to Battulei, and arrived there at half-past three. We anchored about two miles from land, as the coast is bordered by coral ridges. The authorities came on board, as usual, to welcome the captain. Here, besides the Orankay and the Orantua, are also a

captain and a major. It is difficult to imagine—still more to describe—stranger and more ridiculous figures than these chiefs; so short are they in stature, and so varied in colour. The skin varies between black, brown, and yellow; the type is so mixed that it is difficult to decide to what race these men belong, or what blood runs in their veins. They are dressed, so to speak, in European guise; but the fashion of their clothes is centuries old, and with age they must have changed both colour and form many times, passing from black, through all gradations of tints, until they have arrived at their present reddish or greenish appearance. Their shirts, once white, now coffee-coloured, are therefore more in harmony with their skins. On their heads they bear hats, like a tube or cylinder, certainly not made for the wearers, and which keep their place with difficulty, so that the owner is obliged either to stand still or to hold his hat on when he walks. These hats probably date from the first invention of that ridiculous kind of head-gear, and pass, like the crown of our kings, from father to son, from generation to generation—the gradual change in their colour possibly serving as a clue to their age. One of the aristocrats of the country was dressed in scarlet cloth, which was positively in good condition. How he had managed to get into these clothes is a marvel, for they were so tight he could hardly move. These natives were polite in manner, although no more open or truthful in answering the captain's questions than were the people of Dobbo. They, too, denied

having any intercourse with the inhabitants of New Guinea. So soon as the official reception was over, they inspected the ship, and were presented with neckerchiefs, gloves, and other articles of dress, which, although they were old, highly delighted them. The gloves were a great puzzle to them, and no doubt their dress was more grotesque when they went on land than it had been before; but they seemed quite contented with themselves.

These chiefs also carry the silver-headed canes given them by the Dutch, and on the chief house of the village the Dutch flag was hoisted.

*December 25th.*—I accompanied the captain on shore. He was received in a large decorated place in the middle of the great square of Battulei. All the authorities came out to welcome him, followed by all the men of the village. It is worthy of remark that the chiefs wore their gloves!

I was quite astonished, on finding myself among the people of this country, to observe the difference between the natives, not only of Dobbo, Wakau, and Wammar, but even those of this village, in which the Malay type is more or less distinct, with, however, a great variety of gradations. The contrast is strongly marked between those whom I call natives, with their beautiful forms, their agile movements, and their strength, and their mongrel rulers, who are a mixture of Malay, Portuguese, Arab, and Papuan. These natives seem far superior to any other Papuans whom I have seen. They are tall, and well made; in colour they are darker than the Malay, but much lighter than any Papuans I have hitherto

seen. Their hair is curly, black, and glossy, not shaggy nor crisp. The nose is seldom flat; on the contrary, it is often aquiline, and the lips are not thick. The skull is slightly pointed, the forehead is depressed, and the limbs are strong and well-proportioned. I observed some men wearing beards, and a few with hair on the body. Their covering is only what decency requires. Like other savages, they wear earrings, shell or wooden bracelets, or beads of different colours, which they value highly. They also wear necklets, made of the teeth of dogs, fish, or crocodiles.

During the ceremony of the reception, we did not see any women or girls, except through the windows or the chinks of the houses; but these glimpses led us to believe that the women are comely. When the reception was over, business began, and we bought birds of paradise (*Paradisea apoda*), mother-of-pearl, and pearls, paying a high price, considering the locality. For instance, three dollars for skins of the apoda in very bad condition, and a dollar for a kilogram of mother-of-pearl.

*December 26th.*—The officers were busy with hydrographical observations. On going ashore with the ship's steward, we found it very difficult to land, on account of the coral reefs which surround the coast, and which are visible at low water.

Battulei is upon an old coral reef, a few yards above the level of the sea, and seems to rise from the waves as if by magic. All the coast of the Arru islands which we have seen is flat, intersected by channels, and is of the same madrepore for-

mation, looking as if it had issued from the waves, or, rather, as if it had been formed by the coral insect, and raised little by little to its present position. The coral reef that now surrounds the coast seems likely to increase; if this be so, all the beach now uncovered at low tide will by degrees be added to the coast.

We observed thousands of white birds (*ardea*) perched on the casuarina-trees, which grow luxuriantly along the shore. From a distance the trees seemed to be covered with flowers.

During our excursion into the little forest near the village, I admired one of the most beautiful *cicas* I have ever seen (*Cicas Rumphii*). I observed others, the trunks three or four yards in height, the leaves long and of a rich dark green. The fruit is large, and remarkable for its colour and shape, in which it resembles the pineapple. When opened, however, it has a disagreeable odour, and emits a fluid which appears to be resinous. Finding no sport, we returned to the village, where we were surrounded by a crowd of curious natives, from whom we bought some necklets. They would not let us have any bracelets.

The population of Battulei numbers between four and five hundred inhabitants, who live in well-built wooden houses. Eight or ten large trunks of trees serve as pillars to support the houses, at about six feet from the ground. Some of these trunks are roughly carved, so as to represent columns. The houses are spacious, with a very high-pointed roof, and very low walls, the effect of which is strange but picturesque. Under the

houses, and in the middle of the large square, I saw some holes, and, having inquired their meaning, I was told that they are used for graves. I was also told that the corpses are left in these holes only for a month, after which they are thrown into the sea. In one there actually was a corpse in an advanced state of decomposition. I thought I might obtain some skulls for my collection, if what had been said of the custom of removing the bodies after a month to make room for others were true. At first the natives seemed horrified at my request, and asked what I meant to do with them. I explained as well as I could, told them how valuable the skulls would be to me, and that I should preserve them carefully, instead of throwing the remains of the dead to the fishes, or exposing them to the birds. I thought by this to induce them to accede to my request, but I soon perceived that my words made but little impression upon them. Then I showed them a ringhit (dollar), and offered it to them for a skull. A few minutes afterwards, one of the natives asked me to give him the dollar, and promised me in return the skull of an enemy, whom he had killed, and on which the marks of the parang, with which he had sent him out of the world, were still visible. When the natives saw how easily they could obtain a dollar, they were anxious to bring me a greater number of skulls than I wanted. Unfortunately, those which they did bring were almost all minus the lower jaw.

Two Chinamen live here all the year round. They own stores, well supplied with European and Chinese wares, and they buy what they can from



the natives in the course of the year—tortoiseshell, tripang, mother-of-pearl, birds of paradise, the tail and fins of the shark, and swallows' nests. They buy cheap and sell dear; arrack, cotton, arms, and pottery are the principal articles with which their stores are filled. They have comfortable houses, and their wives are natives of the place, or slaves. They also possess pigs, chickens, cats, and geese. They know how to turn all these things to account, and are not badly off. It is strange to find Chinamen even in this remote corner of the earth, but what will not the thirst for gold do?

When our business here was finished, we went to visit another village named Comul, on the island opposite Battulei. During the crossing, which lasted about half an hour, a heavy shower fell; it refreshed us, perhaps, but it is possible to have too much of a good thing.

Comul is eight or nine feet above the level of the sea, and is situated on a pointed rock. The trunk of a tree serves for steps by which to ascend to the village. The strata of coral of which it is formed, as well as the remains of many shells, and of animals and plants, which have become almost petrifications, are perceptible in the rock.

We were met by a Chinaman, who welcomed us to his house, a bazaar of European and Chinese articles, which he sells cheaper than they do at Amboyna. Cotton, too, he offered us at half-price, as well as fire-arms, powder, swords, knives, cups of earthenware and porcelain, gongs, elephants' teeth—in short, a little of everything. He had two rooms full of mother-of-pearl of first-rate quality; and he showed us a pearl of won-

derful size and beauty, but for which he asked such an enormous price that we could not even think of buying it.

Although the natives still make use of the bow and arrow, they also know how to use a gun; and a poor fellow came to us to ask how he was to extract a bullet from one of his feet. We suggested to him to come on board, where the doctor could do it for him easily. But this he would not do; he preferred remaining with the bullet in his foot.

We saw no young, and only a few old women here. The chiefs of these villages are nominally Mussulmans, but they are not faithful observers of their law; they drink arrack as if it were water. At Wakan and Wammar they are also Mussulmans; but there are a few so-called Christians, the schoolmaster, for example. We were unable to discover whether the natives had any religious belief; at all events, they have no temple, and they have not as yet embraced either the religion of Christ or that of Mohammed. Only the Malays and the half-caste belong as yet either to the one or the other creed.

When we returned to the ship, we found the sailors had caught a fine sea-snake (*Hydrophis Stokesii*), which measured over two yards in length. They had put it into a trough full of water, in order to observe its movements. When I arrived, several sailors were standing round it, and I saw some of them put their hands in and touch the serpent, without its trying to bite them or to defend itself.

December 27th.—The captain, not having suc-

ceeded in obtaining the information we desired respecting New Guinea, decided upon sending the pilot on shore, keeping Ciaccia with us, and on endeavouring to land by ourselves at Outanata.

From the spot where we were anchored we could discern the mountains of New Guinea this morning. The weather is magnificent, and so calm that we hope to-morrow to be able to touch the native land of the bird of paradise once more. No one on board can fully appreciate the pleasure I shall feel on arriving there; for it was this spot I once before attempted to reach with Beccari, when, as I have already narrated, I failed.

*December 28th.*—During the night a strong wind arose, and the sea became very rough. Early this morning we could clearly see the coast of New Guinea, a vast plain at the foot of the mountainous chain (*Charles Louis*), whose majestic summits we can plainly distinguish, although perhaps here and there the highest peaks may be hidden from sight by the clouds. This plain appears to be covered with the rank vegetation which is seen in tropical climates only.

We coasted along to the north of Outanata, within a range of five miles of it, until at half-past twelve we came to the mouth of the river Outanata. The wind being still fresh, and the sea more and more boisterous, I began to understand how impossible it would be to find good anchorage at such an exposed spot, and that we ought not to risk our little boat in making an attempt to do so, although it was vexatious to be

prevented when nearly half-way across. But so it was to be.

At half-past two o'clock the captain came to the conclusion that it was utterly useless to try to get ashore here, where twice before I had made the attempt in vain, and the order was given to sail to Torres Strait. To lessen my disappointment, the Count has promised me to touch at some other locality on the coast of New Guinea, or at some other part of the southern coast. It is some consolation for to-day's failure, that the officers have been able to make certain corrections in the chart of this side of New Guinea, which is little, if at all known.

*December 30th.*—The weather is still stormy, and we are often overtaken by torrents of rain. The sea grows rough as we advance towards the south, and we have lost sight of New Guinea.

*December 31st.*—We had hoped to near Cape Wessel, but now that hope is gone, and we are sailing towards Booby Island.

*January 1st, 1873.*—To-day we began the New Year by crossing Torres Strait.

*January 2nd.*—At last we have entered the famous strait which divides New Guinea from Australia, and, taking all necessary precaution, we have successfully navigated Prince of Wales Channel, and shall anchor for the night near Mount Ernest island.

*January 3rd.*—Ciaccia, the Papuan from Dobbo, appears already tired of being well off; surfeited by good living, and as much tobacco as he can smoke. He often comes and asks me when we

shall return to Dobbo. It is easy to see he does not like being on board.

*January 4th.*—In Torres Strait we find a complete labyrinth of islands, rocks, and coral reefs, which, for the most part, are clearly to be seen at low water, when they plainly prove the dangers of navigation here. We are now in the open sea (called the Coral Sea), and shall carry with us the remembrance of the various kinds of fish in Torres Strait. Long shall we remember those still and transparent waters, full of polypi and coral, and the strange form and vivid colours of the fish; nor shall we soon forget the myriads of sea-birds which frequent the coasts of these desert islands.

*January 5th.*—To-day we approached the south-east coast of New Guinea, and sailed along outside the barrier that surrounds it. It seems that the captain had resolved to visit Orangerie Bay, which lies between  $149^{\circ} 28'$  and  $149^{\circ} 5'$  east long. in  $10^{\circ} 29'$  south latitude. The weather continues favourable, and I hope we shall not be again disappointed.

*January 7th.*—Yesterday we sighted the Owen Stanley mountains, the summits of which we could discern; and at mid-day we arrived in front of the bay, which was the aim we had in view, and, crossing the barrier, cast anchor near a small island called the Orange. The aspect of the country before us is splendid on every side, and even between the rocks on the numberless small islands rise majestic cocoa-nut trees, forming here and there real forests. The plains, which we can see a long way off, are for the most part covered with dense vegetation to

the foot of the hills which form the counter-scarp of the lofty Owen Stanley chain; and we can distinctly see the summits of the Simpson and Thomson mountains which command the bay.

We can also see Dufaure island, which is to a great extent cultivated by the natives. They have cut down the trees, not only on the lower slopes, but also on the side of the mountain, which rises 1200 feet above the level of the sea. The "Vittor Pisani" advances slowly and majestically, and soon becomes an object of curiosity to numberless natives, who emerge from all the rocks and little islets as we approach. Along the coast we see many villages, in which are crowds of people moving hurriedly about as if to tell the news of the arrival of the monster. At this distance they seem so diminutive that the place looks like an ant's nest when disturbed by the approach of an enemy.

We had scarcely passed the small island of Ropo-ropo when a number of little boats put to sea, and followed us as fast as the men could row. Only three ventured to come close, and these three were the smallest, with three men in each. When we had cast anchor they came within a hundred and fifty yards of us; but although we urged them to come nearer, they remained for a long time stationary in the position they had taken. By degrees they were joined by the boats which had fallen behind, and others, which appeared from different parts of the bay. Ultimately we were surrounded by about thirty small canoes, made of the trunks of trees hollowed

out, pretty and graceful in form, and each one provided with paddles.

None of the men appeared to carry arms. I should find it difficult to say which was the greater, their interest in us, or ours in them, and for some time we remained looking at one another. They talked, laughed, and shouted loudly; we did the same, in the hope of enticing them to approach nearer, and come on board. We were beginning to despair of success, when the captain ordered the band to play some Italian national airs. Strange to say, the sound of the musical instruments had more effect on these people than all our fair words and friendly signs. They seemed drawn on as if by magic in their desire to hear better; and after a long silence, during which they listened in wonder, they broke forth into exclamations and gestures expressive of astonishment and pleasure. At length they came near enough to catch a rope that was thrown them, and came on board.

When Ciaccia saw all these people coming, he was so frightened that it was impossible to keep him on deck, and he went down to the cook's galley for security. He trembled like a leaf, and told every one he met that we should all be killed and eaten!

A young man, more courageous than the rest, led the way on deck, and the first thing they asked for was "dim-dim"—the meaning of which we could not discover. We offered them some ship's biscuit; a few of them only would touch it, and they looked at it as if it were a rare and unknown commodity, without wishing to eat it. They also accepted some tobacco, in

the same ignorance as to its uses, and when I showed them how we used it, they gave it back. From this we may infer that the use of the tobacco plant are unknown to these natives, or that, if known, it is not appreciated. They chew betel and areca nuts.

We bought from them some combs made of bamboo, and necklaces of shells, seeds, or cassowary feathers. Before the end of the interview we ascertained that "dim-dim" meant iron, or iron articles.

We did not see any women; and, although the men appeared to be unarmed, we perceived, in the canoes alongside, lances, axes, and stone clubs, hidden under leaves, and covered by the water which had got into the boats.

At the close of the day they went away, making signs that they would come again to-morrow.

*January 8th.*—The captain and some of the officers went in the steam launch to reconnoitre the bay. To my great disappointment, the doctor's orders kept me on board the whole day.

The natives came again, in greater numbers than yesterday, bringing cocoa-nuts and yams to exchange, as well as spear handles of hard wood, very delicately carved. To get iron they would have sold their skins. We had neither knives nor axes to spare, but we soon discovered that they were quite satisfied with old iron, or old hoops of barrels cut into little pieces.

Nothing occurred to disturb the harmony and friendship between us and the natives, although exchange and barter was going on all day. Little disputes often arose between the canoes coming



from different villages ; but they were soon over, and had nothing to do with us.

Ciaccia is still much afraid of these men, although almost of the same nation ; and he does not like to go near them, lest he might be killed and eaten.

To-day, however, when he saw some canoes full of women and children, he plucked up a little spirit, and consented to remain on the deck, and observe the visitors, though under cover of a gun-carriage.

The captain returned late, much pleased with his excursion, having discovered another bay, or deep lagoon, beyond this bay, which he thinks may serve hereafter as a good port, and he has named it Port Vittor Pisani. He told me he had been very well received, both by the men and the women ; although, as was natural, the latter appeared timid. One of the chiefs undertook to guide him to his own village, and, in exchange for an axe, offered him first, a dog, then a pig, and, finally, a little girl—all these offers he declined.

Among the people who came on board I remarked some who were quite handsome, particularly the young women. The latter wore petticoats made of grass fibre, reaching only to the knee. They were tattooed on the face and breast, and a few on the shoulders also in pretty patterns. The men were tattooed on the shoulders, but were hardly enough clothed to satisfy the requirements of decency. Their right ears were pierced, and they wore round wooden ear-rings, an inch, sometimes two inches, long. Their

bracelets also deserve especial remark, although simple in construction, and easy to manufacture. Nature alone had supplied these ornaments, which were simply human jawbones—perhaps those of enemies, and worn in commemoration of victory. Or they may have belonged to departed friends, and if so, would prove in what reverence these people hold the memory of the dead. But I am inclined to think these bracelets are trophies. They are made by tying the two jawbones together with a piece of string, and are ornamented with variously-coloured feathers. The women also wore necklaces, made of human vertebræ, and I obtained one of these curious ornaments for my collection. The men had necklaces made of dogs' and crocodiles' teeth; the latter, being very white, threw the dark skins of their wearers into strong relief. I observed that here, as in other parts of this large island, several natives were afflicted with skin diseases, that called cascado being the most common.

*January 9th.*—The doctor yielded to my entreaty, and allowed me to go on shore to-day. As all the boats were engaged on hydrographical business, I was obliged to be content with one of those employed in sounding the bay from our anchorage to the coast, in a north easterly direction. From various causes the early hours of the morning were passed unprofitably, and in the meantime the wind had risen, and the sea was dashing against the shore with such violence that on taking soundings we found it impossible to land, although we tried many different places.

At our attempting to approach, a crowd of men women, and children came to the water's edge, and invited us to land, gesticulating wildly, waving the branches they held in their hands, and showing us cocoa-nuts, ornaments, and other things, which perhaps they intended to sell or give us. Their cries were so loud as almost to drown the noise of the waves. Finding all our efforts to land were useless, we gave up the attempt, and reluctantly rowed away. The disappointment of the natives was as great as our own. They continued to urge us by signs to renew our efforts, and I much regretted our inability, for these natives were some who had been prevented by others from coming on board yesterday, and, being probably weaker, had been obliged to yield.

## CHAPTER XI.

Missing a bargain—Cleanliness and order of the Native houses—Cultivation—Arms—Native carving—A remarkable club—Birds of Paradise—A new species—An early start—A deadly weapon—Our last adventure at Orangerie Bay—A probable tradition—Poor Ciaccia—Peculiarities of the Natives—Their houses—I make friends with the women—Domestic animals—In sight of Cape Danger—Port Jackson—Double Bay.

HAVING obtained leave from the captain to land at a point of my own selection, so soon as the hydrographical works were concluded, I asked the officer in command of the boat to take me to a small village at the extreme north of Dufaure Island. We were received there by several of the natives, who possess two houses situated under the shade of a small plantation of cocoa-nut trees. They welcomed us very kindly, and we entered at once upon the usual business of barter. I had procured a large piece of iron before I left the ship, and this attracted the curiosity and attention of the natives. They offered me several things for it—among others, a boy of about ten years old. As I was on the point of concluding this bargain, a boat full of women arrived. Not expecting to find us in their village, they yielded to the first impulse of timidity; and, abandoning the canoe, jumped into the water. The scene

that followed was ludicrous in the extreme. Their light petticoats, which the women in vain attempted to keep down, floated on the water; and in this plight they looked like some extraordinary aquatic plant. The scene did not last long, however—partly because the women became aware of their error, and partly because the men persuaded them to come ashore. This little episode put an end to my negotiations, for among the women just arrived was the mother of the boy in question. She was informed of the pending bargain, and having examined the piece of iron offered as her son's price, she was not satisfied with one, but demanded two pieces. As I had only one I could not satisfy her, and so she retained possession of her child, and I, of my piece of iron. Not being able to find another boy to my taste, I asked, instead, for one of the small petticoats worn by the women here. Unfortunately, there was not one to spare, for each woman possessed only the one she wore. Then there arose the difficulty of exchanging the garment for my piece of iron; but one of the women, more quick-witted than the rest, asked me for a handkerchief, and covering herself with it in such a fashion that she no longer required a petticoat, she presented that garment to me with one hand, while with the other she caught hold of the much-coveted piece of iron.

The houses are simple in construction; they consist of walls about a yard in height, and the roof is pointed, and covered with palm leaves. Inside they are clean, and contain various articles belonging to the natives, such as tools

and nets, and some earthenware of native manufacture.

On the outside, and all around the houses, I observed the same order and cleanliness.

To show the natives what our guns could do, I shot a bird which had alighted on a tree near the houses (*Tropidorhincus Novæ Guineæ*). They did not evince much fear at the noise of the gun, but appeared greatly surprised when the bird fell dead, and wished to have it, to examine, and to find out how it had been possible to kill it so easily. Separating the feathers, they sought for the wound, clicking their tongues on their palates all the time, as is usual with them whenever they want to express astonishment. I killed a parrot of bright plumage (*Eclectus polichlorus*), and they wished to have its feathers, which they use as ornaments; and, as it was too common a bird for my collection, I acceded to their wishes.

I ascertained that they cultivated bananas, yams, and the sweet potato, as well as the sugar-cane; and I observed that for splitting wood they use a kind of club made of a hard wood, finely carved. This I take to be the palm-tree, and, to enhance the value of the work, they inlay it with white. They generally



wear, hanging at the side, a disc, made from a large white shell, to which they occasionally add ornaments of tortoise-shell. Their arms are spears, more or less elaborate, according to the skill of the makers. They are not limited to a single design in the manufacture of their arms or other articles; but, on the contrary, have various patterns, as for instance, in the spatulas, or sticks of black wood, probably ebony, which they use to carry lime to their mouths. I observed that they also use oval wooden shields, very long, and mostly painted red and white.

We re-embarked towards the evening, when the canoes, after trading with the natives, returned to their villages. The captain continued the hydrographical survey of Dufaure Island, and to-day he visited several other villages. One of these he named the "thieves' village," because while on board the steam launch he was robbed of two pieces of iron there. Not being able to get them back, he ordered all the canoes to go to a distance, and they accordingly did so. A little later he allowed them to approach again, but only two at a time. This prevented any confusion, so that he was able to remain without further inconvenience.

When I returned on board I was much surprised to find that the sailors had obtained several skins of a species of bird of paradise, quite new to me. These are real birds of paradise, of a kind partaking of the *Paradisea apoda* and the *Paradisea minor*, or *Papuana*. In the colour of the side feathers they resemble a species that inhabit Waigen Island, although they differ in one respect.

*Paradisea Raggiiana.*

The side feathers are shorter in the latter species, and curved towards the points; and the two centre feathers of the tail in this Waigeu species (*Paradisea rubra*), are as Wallace has remarked, like two narrow ribbons, while in the birds brought by the natives to-day these two centre feathers are *filiformi*, like those of *Paradisea apoda* and *Paradisea minor*.

Although the skins obtained to-day are mutilated, for they were prepared by the natives, who use them as ornaments, it is easy to recognize how beautiful this bird must be when in perfect condition; and it is a matter of great scientific interest to find here, in this far distant part of eastern New Guinea, a species with such close affinity to those of the north-west, yet so distinct. While this kind approaches the *Paradisea minor* in size, it differs from it in the red colour of the side wings, in a yellow ring, which divides the green of the throat from the ruby colour of the breast, and in not having a yellowish back, but, instead, a yellow band on the small feathers of the wing. It differs from the *apoda* in being much smaller, in the yellow ring on the neck, and in the yellow-striped wings, which the *apoda* has not, and, lastly, in the red colour of the side wings. Only a naturalist can imagine how pleased I am at this discovery, made just on the eve of leaving New Guinea, perhaps for ever! If this be a new species, as I really believe it is, I purpose calling it *Paradisea Raggiiana*, after an old and true friend of mine, the Marquis Raggi, of Genoa, a most ardent sportsman and zoologist.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This species was described by Selater under the name of *Paradisea Raggiiana*.



*January 10th.*—For hygienic reasons the captain thought it well not to remain longer in this country, but to gain a more temperate climate as quickly as possible.

It was resolved that we should start at once, early in the morning. At dawn of day the natives, eager to obtain some object, probably of no value to us, but of great price in their eyes, surrounded our ship, in even greater numbers than on the preceding day. We, on our part, knowing we were to start in a few hours, were making all possible haste to employ our time well, and obtain all the interesting objects we could from the natives. We succeeded in getting some stone and wooden weapons, of different shapes, terrible things, which at one blow would crack the hardest skull ever framed. I observed two of different shapes—one with a smooth disc, thick in the centre, and ending in an acute angle; capable, therefore, of cutting and bruising at the same time.

These deadly weapons have a hole in the centre, and a piece of hard wood passed through it, varying in length from two to five feet, serves for a handle. Sometimes this stone

centre is cut into the shape of a star; this is a rarer shape. The native axes are of hard green



stone, like serpentine, adjusted to a wooden handle made from the branch of a tree.

At last we ordered the natives to leave the ship, so that we might begin our preparations for departure. They obeyed with regret, and remained at a short distance observing our movements. Meanwhile we threw a bullock, which had died on board, into the sea. This excited their curiosity greatly, all the canoes drew near it; and from the natives' gestures and speech it was easy to understand how much interested they were in such an ugly animal, the like of which they had never seen. Then some of them came and asked if they might carry the poor beast away with them, and eat it. They signified this to us by gestures, and by the same means we intimated to them that they might have the animal, but they must abstain from eating it. It is difficult to say whether they understood or not; but having made the bullock fast between two canoes, they rowed off in the direction of the nearest village.

This was our last adventure with the natives of Orangerie Bay. They will certainly remember the great monster whom we abandoned, and will keep its bones in their village as relics, Heaven knows how long, certainly not less prized than the bits of iron they bought from us. Who can say that it will not become something sacred to them, about which they will invent a legend, a tradition, or a superstition?

Some day a traveller visiting Orangerie Bay, and finding in the house of the natives the head, or a tooth, of the bullock of the "Vittor Pisani," may feel himself called upon to proclaim the dis-

covery of a new *bos*, or of a new monster, to the world. Who can say what may not be made out of the horns of the bullock of the "Vittor Pisani" by a traveller anxious to record strange discoveries!

We weighed anchor, and slowly moved out of the bay. The canoes, which had formed into a semicircle, made room to let the large boat pass. Although they were observing our manœuvres, they had apparently not understood that we were leaving them; and when they perceived we were really going, they rowed after us, and with cries and gestures invited us to stay with them. They accompanied us almost out of the bay; and then, with a final cheer, we bade a probably eternal farewell to those sons of nature.

Chance had made us acquainted with them; and our intercourse with them, although so brief, was sufficient to give us a feeling of sympathy with these people, whose way of life, so different to ours that its simplicity almost resembles that of our first parents, was nevertheless far from being that of savages.

The engine was put to its full speed, and in a short time we lost sight of the canoes, of the villages, and then of the island; and now we are in the open sea, steering for Sydney.

Ciaccia, our Papuan, turning towards the west, pointed out to me that his country lay there, where the sun sets, and asked me why do we go where the sun rises instead? Poor Ciaccia! He knows that to have plenty to eat and drink is a good thing, but he has apparently come to the conclusion that there is nothing like liberty.

Although he is a slave on land, he feels that he is a prisoner on board.

If we were to judge from the people whom we made out at Orangerie Bay, the numerous villages, and the columns of smoke rising from the different points of the coast, we might conclude that the population was more numerous here than at the north-west of this great island. From the little we have seen of the natives, and judging from their plantations, we might readily conclude, not only that they are more numerous here, but that in a certain way, although they belong to what may be called the age of stone, they live in a less savage manner than the inhabitants of the north-west.

The country is more fruitful. The forests do not seem to be so thick and damp, as in the north. The soil is apparently more fertile, and of a volcanic nature, and it is easy to perceive that it is farther from the equator.

A traveller from the north-west countries of New Guinea, who sees the inhabitants of Orangerie Bay for the first time, is struck by a difference of colour, a difference of type, and a difference of customs and usages. The colour of the natives in general appeared to me to be lighter; and although there are some with very dark skins, still certain individuals had such fair skins that they might have been albinos. I do not, however, think this is so, but that it is a question of a mixed race, to the formation of which a darker race contributed—probably the Papuans, whom we saw in the west and a race with fairer skins, such as the Polynesians.

This type seems to be still more mixed, and while we find the receding forehead, with temporal bones much compressed, and facial bones projecting, small pointed chins, and somewhat long skulls, we also find flat faces and round heads. This race have bright, intelligent eyes, the nose often aquiline, the lips sometimes well defined, but never exaggerated, and in general clearly cut. They have curly hair, but it is not woolly, although often crisp. They do not tie up their hair, but let it fall over their shoulders, and they dress it with bamboo combs, which they always carry with them. They are of middle stature, perhaps not shorter than the southern races of Europe. They are slight and well proportioned, and more inclined to be thin than fat. Their eyes are bright and black; the ball of the eye is sometimes yellowish. As to the usages here, the traveller is surprised to find that tattooing is practised to a vast extent among the women, but not, so far as we know, among the girls. Among the men it is not practised, or at least very little. The short petticoat is also a new custom, apparently peculiar to these people, while it is almost unknown in the north-west. Here, as in the northern parts, they wear conch-shells passed through the holes in the nose; but only here is the lobe of the ear so deformed as to allow of the insertion of discs of wood, or of conch-shells of about two inches in diameter. With time, patience, and skill, they succeed in obtaining this result. The method most commonly observed is to insert leaves of pandanus, tightly rolled, into the hole, so that it gradually becomes larger. In the

adornment of their persons they use shells, the teeth and bones of animals, also feathers. A kind of plume made out of the tail feathers of a *Dactylopsyla*, is commonly used as an ornament, and also the feathers of the cockatoo and the cassowary. I have already stated, and it is useless to repeat, that human bones are also used as ornaments; but this, I may observe, is not the practice in the north-west. Here we did not see trophies of human heads hanging in front of all the houses, as was the custom a few years ago at Dorey, and in other villages of the north-west; but instead we saw collections of bones, and human skulls heaped up together, in tens. We did not succeed, however, in obtaining any of these. The weapons we saw were lances and stone clubs; for defensive weapons the natives sometimes use shields, but not often. I saw neither bows nor arrows. We did not see any house built in the water on piles, as at Mansinam and Dorey; on the shore, or a little further inland, they are all on piles, although never so high from the ground as on



Hornbills' beaks, used as a headdress.

Mount Arfak. The piles are at most three or four feet high.

We had not much opportunity in our three days' stay of learning particulars concerning these natives; but they seemed light-hearted and merry, much inclined to laugh at nothing; and their physiognomy denoted a kindly temper. The chiefs, however, always preserved a serious demeanour, and were not to be moved by anything they saw or that occurred around them. The women, who at first seemed very timid, began little by little to be more confident, and allowed me to put necklaces round their necks, and to teach them how to put on a scarf, shawl, or any other kind of adornment. The women often wear their hair cut short; few of them seemed to take any care of it, so that we may say the fashion of the country is to wear the hair short.

Except that they are tattooed, the women adorn themselves less than the men, and none of them paint their faces and bodies, as the men do frequently. The dog and pig are the only domestic animals they possess, and it seems they eat the flesh of the former; although, from what we saw in the forests and on the grassy plains, other animals are plentiful. And, from some skulls I obtained from houses which I visited, we are certain that they also eat the cuscus and a small kind of kangaroo, as well as serpents. The sea furnishes them with a great quantity of fish, which they catch by means of hooks and nets, some of them very well made. Besides, the turtles' eggs must supply them with excellent food, without counting the productions of the earth, both wild and cultivated.

Whether the heaps of bones we saw, and the custom of wearing bracelets made out of the human jaw-bone, and necklaces of cervical vertebrae, are to be accepted as proofs of their being cannibals or not, we must admit that these people do not fare badly ; indeed, we may say they live remarkably well.

Towards night we bade a last farewell to the coast of New Guinea, the summits of whose mountains we could now scarcely discern. At sunset they disappeared from our sight, perhaps for ever. For ever ? Who knows ? Who can tell ? If my health should improve, why should I not go back to Orangerie Bay ? Why should I not obtain some beautiful specimens of the bird of paradise, of which I now only possess some ragged skins ? Why should I not return more thoroughly to study these natives, whose customs and habits I have only just had an opportunity of seeing ? If all depends on Fate, why may I not hope to return there again ? If it depends on my own will, I certainly shall return.

*January 20th.*—For nautical reasons we have sailed as far as  $158^{\circ} 21'$  long. E. of Greenwich, and we have reached the  $17^{\circ} 32'$  S. lat. Now, on account of the wind, we can direct our course towards Australia, to Sydney. The weather continues uncertain, but it begins to be a little cooler, much to the relief of the whole crew. Ciaccia comes to me every day, and asks me to go on deck with him ; and when we are on the poop he points his finger in the direction of his country. He thinks, perhaps, we have mistaken our way, and he repeats, "Wakan is



there ! Wakan is there ! ” and begs me to tell the captain. It appears that he thinks we are still going to some savage country, and that we shall all be killed and eaten. I cannot persuade him that the captain will send him to Wakan somehow or other, and that we shall soon arrive at a fine large country.

*January 28th.*—To-day, at 5 p.m., we came in sight of Cape Danger, on the Australian coast. Ciaccia was wild with delight at seeing land again after our voyage of eighteen days, during which we had seen nothing but sky and water.

His joy, however, was short-lived. “ It is land,” he told me, “ but not Wakan ! ” and, poor fellow ! he began to cry like a child.

He looks upon me as his protector and confidant—in short, as his friend.

To-day he asked me, sobbing, to tell the captain that he had a wife and two children, and that he wanted to go and see them. “ Oh, tell the captain,” he said to me, “ to go back and take me to Wakan ! My wife and my children are expecting me. They will cry ! Tell the captain to take me to Wakan ! ”

Poor Ciaccia ! It seems to me that Fortune mocks him. He was a poor slave, hungry and naked, and she turned him, as if by enchantment, into a prince by comparison. During the first days of being on board he was, no doubt, quite happy ; but now his happiness is changed into torture. The enchanted palace, which the ship must have been to him at first, has now become a horrible prison—a prison which moves on farther and farther from his country and his beloved

family. Poor Ciaccia! He stood for hours motionless on the poop, looking at the water, which seemed to be flying away from us. He appeared lost in thought of his dear ones. If I called him, he turned to me, as if awaking from a dream, and exclaimed, "Wakan, Wakan!" while two tears, like pearls, ran down his cheeks.

*February 1st, 1873.*—This morning, at nine, the "Vittor Pisani" entered Port Jackson. So soon as we had passed the Heads, which are two perpendicular barren rocks, standing one opposite to the other, like the bastions of an immense fortress, forming the entrance to the port, we were transported, as if by enchantment, from the middle of the ocean to a marvellous bay. Here and there numerous small islands and picturesque creeks meet the gaze. On each of the two shores you see houses, villas, and gardens, bordering the little bays and gulfs. The farther we go, the more the beauty increases; at every step a new wonder appears, and something picturesque is to be observed. Far in the distance we see Sydney, with its gardens and towers and its smiling aspect. At ten o'clock we cast anchor near Fort Denison, and salute the town with twenty-one guns. I cannot describe the impression made upon me by finding myself once more in the civilized world; but I may perhaps be allowed to say that, returning from a country which we call savage, on seeing the guns in the port of Sydney, masked and hidden by flower-gardens, I could but draw a comparison between what we call civilization and barbarism. I thought of all the study, the labour, and the expense that these guns and fortifications

must have cost, and the object of it all; and then, calling to mind the savages of New Guinea, I envied them their life, because the art of destroying their fellows has not made such progress among them as among us civilized men.

*February 2nd.*—I obtained permission to accompany Ciaccia on shore. He seemed not to believe his own eyes, but to think it all a dream. Everything he saw was new to him, and many things, such as horses and carriages, frightened him. The report of the cannon yesterday alarmed him so much, that he was afraid of moving from a corner where he had hidden himself; and to-day, while walking with me in the street, he often asked if that noise would be repeated. In conducting him on shore, I had proposed to myself to study his impressions from his face; but I was disappointed, he was too much confused by seeing so many things at once. The ladies interested him most, after the horses and carriages, and he could not understand how a head could remain steady on a pyramid, as the dresses of our ladies made them appear to him to be. He could not comprehend how they could move under them. After having walked several hours with me, I thought he would have derived some pleasure from the things he saw; but he stopped me by taking hold of my arm. I turned to him to ask what he wanted, and he moaned: "Oh, let us go to Wakan! Tell the captain to take me back to Wakan!"

*February 6th.*—To-day I am settled in a nice little house at Double Bay. From my verandah I see the blue waves at Port Jackson. Verdant

hills and pretty villas are around me, and my house is in the midst of gardens. Double Bay seems to be a little Eden, and, looking around me, I feel that my journey has come to an end, and that I am again in a civilized country.

## SUMMARY OF OBSERVATIONS MADE DURING MY VOYAGE OF 1872-1873.

It will, I think, be useful to summarize in one chapter some notes on the country I have visited, its climate and its people, and to add a few of my own observations concerning the method of reaping the greatest profit from all these.

When, on the 8th of April, 1872, we sighted for the first time the land of New Guinea, at long. E. of Greenwich of about  $132^{\circ} 48'$ , and lat. S.  $3^{\circ} 35'$ , we found ourselves approaching a mountainous country, overgrown with dense forest. The hills, whose base was washed by the sea, seemed to rise up as barriers to defend the entrance of the country which we proposed to explore. Behind these hills rose other and higher mountains; but all, so far as we could perceive, were clothed with rich vegetation.

A chain of hills, rising in succession towards the east, encloses a bay which would make a safe harbour. It is protected from the north-west winds by the islands of Faor and Karas, and from the south-east monsoon by the mountains of Cape Sapei, or Tangion Bair as it is called by the natives. This harbour might bear the native

name of Kulokadi, from a locality in the bay which is now so denominated.

As we journey northwards, the coast continues fragmentary, and, as it were, notched. There are frequent bays and creeks, formed by the jutting out of the hills into the sea. Thus the chain I have mentioned reaches to the extreme point of a peninsula, which is called by the natives Papua Onin, and forms a headland at Hati-Hati, the principal village of the Onin.

Before coming to Hati-Hati, I must mention that we visited another good harbour, viz., Kapoar. It is interesting on account of the trade carried on between the natives and the Boughis merchants, who come thither from Macassar in quest of muscatel-nuts, birds of paradise, and the highly-prized bark of the massoi.

We lost sight of New Guinea while in the Gulf of MacClure, but sighted it again at Cape Selè, or English Point. Here the hills come quite down to the sea, clothed to the water's edge with ever-verdant tropical vegetation. Having entered the Pitt Straits, which offer very picturesque views to the traveller, we found ourselves between the islands of Battauta and Salwattee. On both sides are lovely hills, covered with tropical plants. Near a small island, called Sorong, we regained the coast of New Guinea. There was no change in the aspect of the country; the hills still rise from the sea, and are still richly wooded.

Nor, as we proceed further to the north-east, is there any change. The broken line of hills reaches to the extreme eastern limit of the peninsula formed by the Gulf of MacClure and

Geelvink Bay. The mountains turning abruptly to the south, become gigantic, and Mount Arfak, lord of them all, towers 3000 yards above the level of the sea. Yet the aspect of the country is not greatly changed. It is always one mass of vegetation.

From Sorong to Dorey—that is to say, during a coasting voyage of 200 miles—we not only discovered no great river, but not even one that could be considered of any importance. The nature of the hills and mountains allows only of small streams, which convey the rainfall to the sea.

Although this portion of New Guinea has hitherto attracted the greatest number of travellers, and for more than twenty years several Dutch missionaries have lived here, yet the interior is the least known—I might even say it is completely unknown. Dr. Beccari and I are, as yet, the only Europeans who have ventured into the interior at all; but we certainly cannot say that we have explored it. Other travellers who may follow us will find no trace of our footsteps. The northern peninsula of New Guinea may therefore be regarded by geographers as a virgin country.

Of the geology of this part of the great island I will not undertake to give an account. It would perhaps be safe to say that a large part of the western side is of calcareous formation, while the eastern side of the northern peninsula is volcanic. I judge this not only from the shape of the mountains, and from observation of the rocks; I also infer it from the fact that indications of the

existence of volcanic forces underneath the surface are to be discerned.

#### CLIMATE.

If the geographical position of this country be borne in mind, only a few words will be necessary to describe the climate. The country lies within a few degrees from the equator, it is therefore needless to say that the heat is great. In consequence of the constant humidity, I did not find it very oppressive; but this and other causes may make it unhealthy.

The rainfall is frequent and very heavy, and the evaporation is, therefore, considerable. On the high mountains the climate is naturally more temperate: on Mount Hatam the minimum temperature in the month of September was  $10^{\circ}$  and the maximum was  $25^{\circ}$ .<sup>1</sup> On the mountains, at any rate, during the season when I was there—the rains were far more frequent than on the sea coast. Thick clouds often enveloped everything for many hours of the day—sometimes all the day long; not very uncommon occurrences, anywhere.

Without going at present into the causes which render the country unhealthy, suffice it to say that the fevers common in tropical countries are rife in New Guinea. Whether they are more or less deleterious than in other countries has not been ascertained. I believe that a traveller arriving from a non-torrid zone may be almost certain he will not escape fever; but I have no doubt that any one—even a European—coming here from any

<sup>1</sup> Centigrade.



other hot country, could become acclimatized. The Dutch missionaries number many martyrs among them, who have sacrificed their lives to bring the light of the Gospel among these people; but others may be named who are living and in good health. Mr. Van Hasselt has been nine years in the country, and Mr. Woelders four years. This may, however, be owing to these gentlemen having taken up their abode in places already improved by their predecessors.

#### THE INHABITANTS.

Much has been, and is being said, concerning the Papuan race; and perhaps of late years no other race has been equally interesting to students. But to what conclusions has science come in their regard?

I venture to say that the thread is now as tangled as at first. Every traveller who has landed at any point of the coast, were it only for a few hours, feels bound to open the question of the origin and existence of the Papuan race; and, following his own theories or his own fancies—sometimes only his sympathies or antipathies—speaks well or ill of it, according to the case and to his good pleasure.

One will pronounce that the Papuans are all ugly, unintelligent, and ferocious—something less than man—scarcely higher than the ape.

Another, on the contrary, will declare that they are all handsome, intelligent, and equal, if not superior to the white man. Thus it happens that, with all these ideas, these theories, these sympathies and antipathies, science rather loses

than gains, from the confusion of thought and opinion.

It would be desirable that travellers should confine themselves to observing and taking note only of those things which are of scientific interest, avoiding all expression of opinions, which tend to confusion rather than to clearness of thought. It would also be well that only such data as serve for purposes of comparison should be given.

I do not, however, conceal that this is more difficult to put in practice than would appear at first sight; because no one who finds himself treating of subjects that he knows to be interesting can abstain from adding his own views of them, thinking he may at least select facts which will tend to elucidate a scientific problem.

This being premised, while I shall endeavour to give a complete idea of the people whom I saw during this journey, describing only their physical and moral nature so far as I observed it, without further remark, I ask for indulgence if I involuntarily fall into the very fault I wish to see avoided by others.

I will begin once more from the first point I touched at in New Guinea, viz., near Tangion Bair; whence, if the reader will accompany me, I will reconduct him to Mount Arfak, returning afterwards to the Islands of Ke and Arru, and to Orangerie Bay.

At Faor Island, then, we met for the first time, with a people, said to be Papuan; but we also found some true Malays, and, besides these, a mixture of the two races.

Can I, however, now be certain that those

were really of pure coloured blood whom we then held to be so? If we reflect that, from time immemorial, they have been in direct communication with the Malays, so much so as to have adopted the same customs, partly the same language, the manner of dress, the use of iron, &c., we may begin to doubt the purity of the physical characteristics they present, and to think that these may not yet be the true Papuans whom we desire to meet.

From Faor we turn to Kapaor, among the Papua Onin. Along the coast we find that many Papuans have already embraced Islamism, and that there are missionaries of that religion here. They engage in trade, we do not know to what extent, with the Malay population. They appear to have made good progress already in the ways of civilization, and use our cloths, iron, and silver, and also fire-arms. From these facts we may argue that at a very remote period they came in contact with another race, and that not only commercial but sexual relations between them ensued. This may be inferred from the mixture of type traceable among the population.

We note not only a great variety of type, but the colouring also varies very much. The hair is more or less crisp, without, however, being woolly, and on examination affords a further proof of the difference in type and colour already mentioned.

We met with people who told us they came from the interior, and visited the coast at the trading season only, among whom I remarked so great a variety of type, that I could hardly tell which was the real and original one. There

were individuals with flattened noses, and others with aquiline noses—some hardly prognathous, or not at all, and others markedly so. They have besides for a long time had relations with people of another race, and have adopted many of their customs. Are we to believe that they have kept apart as a race, and avoided mixing with strange races or their hybrids?

We remarked here that the natives sometimes file their teeth; this we had not observed in the other parts of the country; it would seem to be a custom special to them. They practise a kind of tattooing, if certain scars on the surface of the skin may be so called. These appear to be produced by making an incision in the skin, and then for a lengthened period irritating it with lime and soot. As to their habits, in the two or three days that we passed among them, we could learn but little, but we discovered that they are hunters of human heads, that they have superstitions, but not idols; and that they hold the fig-tree sacred, on which account I was hindered from shooting a bird which perched on one near our house. They practise tabu, more or less; and in our walks we noticed many houses where a stick was sufficient to prevent any one from entering during the absence of the owners. I note here that in describing the natives of the Fly, and those of Hall Sound, I make similar remarks.

Near some of the houses we saw the sugarcane, and the banana in cultivation, and also grain and beans, certainly imported by the Malays; in addition to these a little tobacco is grown.

The men are handsomely adorned, either with feathers, or with bracelets and necklaces of shells. They also wear earrings and bracelets of silver and other metals. They use iron weapons, wooden lances pointed with cassowary-bone, and bows and arrows. Lastly, it is well to note that not less than five dialects, if not languages, are spoken along the coast between Onin and Tangion Bair; and this proves how various are the component parts of this population.

In the Pitt Straits some aborigines from Batanta Island came about us. They are a fine people, well formed, and seem very strong and active, though somewhat inclined to be fat. Their hair is crisp, without being woolly; their foreheads high, slightly retreating; and their eyes are large and bright; the nose is of moderate size, and rather flat; the mouth regular—some of them have projecting lips. The colour of the skin is dark brown. I could perceive that they were partly mixed with the people I had already seen.

The island of Sorong, although small, may be called a colony, the chiefs of which are more or less Malay, or the descendants of Malays. It also contains many slaves from different points on the neighbouring New Guinea coast, and the coasts of other islands, on which account there is both confusion of type and variety of colour. Besides these there is a small colony, if a little village can be so called, of people called Mafor, who come from an island to the east of Dorey. They are distinguished from the others by

greater height, darker colouring, slightness of figure, and almost invariably an aquiline nose. In character they are more vivacious, bolder, and more enterprising than the other tribes I have hitherto seen.

These natives also practise a kind of tattooing, raising marks on the skin by means of prolonged irritation. They are given to travelling, and tattoo an additional figure above the right breast on the accomplishment of every fresh journey. They use bows and arrows, and spears. They carve deers' horns, which they obtain from the Malays, very skilfully, and convert them into beautiful knife-handles.

In their houses they have wooden idols, carved by themselves, and which they call *karuari*. They do not, however, set great store on these, and willingly sell them.

At Ramoi, a little village on the coast of New Guinea, a few miles from the sea, there is a small population which may be considered of almost pure blood. These people are very dark in colour, of low stature, with woolly hair, small eyes, and flattened noses. They seemed to me the poorest people in the world, and the gloomiest. I was there a fortnight, and never saw one of them laugh. They cultivate the earth, and hunt with the bow and spear, followed by numbers of dogs. They wear several wooden amulets on their necks, wrapped in a piece of cloth. They believe in witchcraft, and in the evil eye, and have a sacred place not far from the village, into which I was never able to penetrate. To dissuade me from attempting it they told me I should have

died had I entered, and they quoted Dr. Bernstein as an instance.\* They bury their dead in the forest. On a grave I observed a broken jar, and I asked a child who was acting as my guide what was inside the grave. He replied "A man." I asked him what he was doing under the earth? He answered that he was sleeping; then blowing on his hands, he lifted them up, at the same time raising his eyes towards the heavens. Some people from the interior came to this village, and they appeared to me to differ materially from the Ramoi men. They were not so dark, were of smaller size, and more prognathous. Their hair was divided into numbers of little tufts, and rolled on bits of bamboo.

The houses at Ramoi are built on piles. The women, however, dwell in common in one large house, to which the ground itself serves as flooring. At Sorong almost all the houses are not only built on piles, but also partly in the water. The houses of Mafor are built entirely in the water, so that a little bridge is necessary to enter them from the shore. At Sorong the inhabitants live principally on fish, sago, bananas, sweet potatoes, and coconuts. Pine-apples are also cultivated by them.

The Malay, or semi-Malay, population is clothed in much the same way as the great bulk of the race; the remaining portion, on the contrary, only cover certain parts of the body.

On our way to Dorey we touched at a point of the coast near Emberbaki, and in this place I met with a family of so-called true Alfuros. Their

\* Dr. Bernstein died at Salwattee shortly after his arrival in Sorong.

colour was decidedly black; but their peculiar physiognomy made them remarkable. It was characterized by the absence of prognathism, the roundness of the head, and by features more nearly approaching those of the negro than any I had as yet seen. I do not, however, refer to the true negro type. They were all rather tall, even the one woman who was with them, and who was remarkable for the extraordinary development of the breasts. Unquestionably if this family represented the Alfuros, the people I saw at Ramoi did not represent them in the least.

At last we reached Andai. Here dwell the Arfaks, a tribe taking their name from the mountain they inhabit. They are said to be a ferocious people, and are always at war with their neighbours; but during my stay among them, I had nothing to complain of. Since the Dutch missionaries established themselves here, the people have become tractable. They are a fine race, tall of stature, and strong, and physically they seem superior to the inhabitants of the coast. They offer more homogeneity of type, and may be considered as the type of the mountain tribes. Their hair is exceedingly thick, black, and woolly, but so covered with grease, that its real colour and nature are hidden. I occasionally met with men who had thick, though not long, beards, and their bodies covered all over with hair. The body-hair has a reddish tint. Their skin is very dark, almost black, without being actually so. The forehead is, in general narrow, and somewhat retreating. The cheek-bones are very high, and projecting beyond the eye orbits.



The nose is almost always aquiline; the lips are well formed, but with a tendency to project; the chin is small and pointed. The women have rounder faces, less retreating foreheads, and less depressed temples, for which reasons the cheekbones do not appear so prominent as in the men.

The Arfaks live in small villages, in houses built on piles. They use bark to cover the framework of the house, and for its interior divisions. Men and women live in the same house, the women on one side and the men on the other. They eat apart. Two small rooms are reserved at the two ends of the house, perhaps for the father and mother of the family, and are sufficiently protected from inquisitive eyes. A small house, separate from the others, is reserved for women in childbirth, and this the men may not enter. The dead are buried before the door of the abode in which they have dwelt during life, and at intervals of two days a fresh supply of food and tobacco is placed on the grave. On the death of the head of a family the house and plantation that belonged to him are forsaken two or three months after his death, and the survivors build a new house, and prepare a new plantation, higher up on the mountain.

The people are polygamous, and obtain their wives by purchase. Aged men often have very young wives. It behoves us, however, to remark, that they are probably rather servants than wives, the line between wives and servants being but ill defined. At Emberbaki, it is said that the father sells the children of a dead mother; while among

the Arfaks the father or kinsfolk take charge of the orphans. They live by hunting and also on the fruits of the earth, cultivating chiefly bananas and yams. They grow and smoke tobacco. They do not use salt properly so called, but they collect a certain kind of salt on the beach which they procure from the ashes of a plant. They converse willingly, but are not noisy, and have a somewhat melancholy expression. They are hunters of human heads, and preserve the heads as trophies. The chiefs have a right to the heads of the slain. If only one head is obtained in battle, it is cut in pieces, and divided among the chiefs.

They are fond of ornament, and use flowers for that purpose. They do not seem to have any religious persuasion, but they believe in a Spirit of Evil, and endeavour to exorcise it by cries and cabalistic signs. After a certain fashion they believe in the immortality of the soul—at any rate, in the not total cessation of existence after death. This may be inferred from their custom of supplying the graves of the departed with provisions, and from their exorcisms of the spirits of the slain.

On our return, we did not stop at Ke Island, where the population is so mixed that it is useless to discuss it—a remark which also applies to the inhabitants of Dobbo, Wammar, and Wakan, on the Arru islands.

At Battulei and Comul, at the extreme north point of Arru, we found a population of a special character, which seems to be a distinct branch of the so-called Papuan family. We must, however, except the chiefs and their families, in whom some

foreign elements can be traced. Taking into consideration the mass of the people, who decidedly differ from their chiefs, we shall find that they differ from the Papuans we have hitherto met with, both in general appearance and in certain special attributes.

The men's figures are not only slight, but elegant, and well proportioned in every limb; and they have an open and unembarrassed manner which shows that there is a mental as well as physical difference between them. Their features are more regular, and though they cannot be said to attain to European outline, they recall the Arab cast of feature. Their skin is less dark than that of the people we have hitherto seen, their hair not so crisp—it is indeed often worn in long ringlets, their features are less harsh, and hardly at all prognathous. Though the forehead is retreating, it is not so narrow, nor are the temples so depressed, as in the people we have previously seen.

Their habits are different, and their houses are not built in the same way. Too much importance must not, however, be attached to this, as various modifications may have been adopted from the customs of the foreigners now established on the coast.

On the other hand, my short stay gave me little opportunity of becoming acquainted with their usages.

Their mode of disposing of their dead has been already described, and I need not recur to this, nor to the trade which they carry on in mother-of-pearl, tripang, swallows'-nests, and birds of

paradise. I regard them as morally and physically superior to the other Papuans we have seen; they are intelligent and industrious, and on the way to something not unlike our own civilization. It is much to be feared that the Arabs, who come among them in great numbers, will destroy the good qualities they possess, and will prevent them from appreciating the advantages of civilized life. It is painful for an explorer to have to acknowledge that the camp-followers of civilization are always opium, alcohol, and the rifle.

From Arru we come to the extreme limit of south-eastern New Guinea. We are at Orangerie Bay—a crowd of people surrounds us: here again we find a mixture of type. The colour of this people is lighter than any we have hitherto seen, but all are not equally light—some are more, some less so. Their hair is not woolly, but it is crisp. In the case of some individuals, especially women, who wore it short, it looked like smooth hair. There are aquiline noses here, but that shape is less common than at the Arru islands and in the north-west of New Guinea. The people are smaller in stature, the head is rounder, and the outline of the face is more regular.

They are a people living, as it were, in the age of stone; for although they know of iron by the name of “dim-dim,” they possess none, and all their instruments are of stone, or bone, or wood. From this it might be thought that they have kept themselves from all contact with foreigners. But, on the contrary, among all the tribes whom I visited, this one presents the greatest confusion of type. It is certain that two races, perhaps equally savage

and primitive—although I am not able to say which two—have come into contact here, and have produced the present population.

We remark that the customs here are different and new to us. They may perhaps put us on the track of discovery of one of these two races, and of conjecture respecting the other.

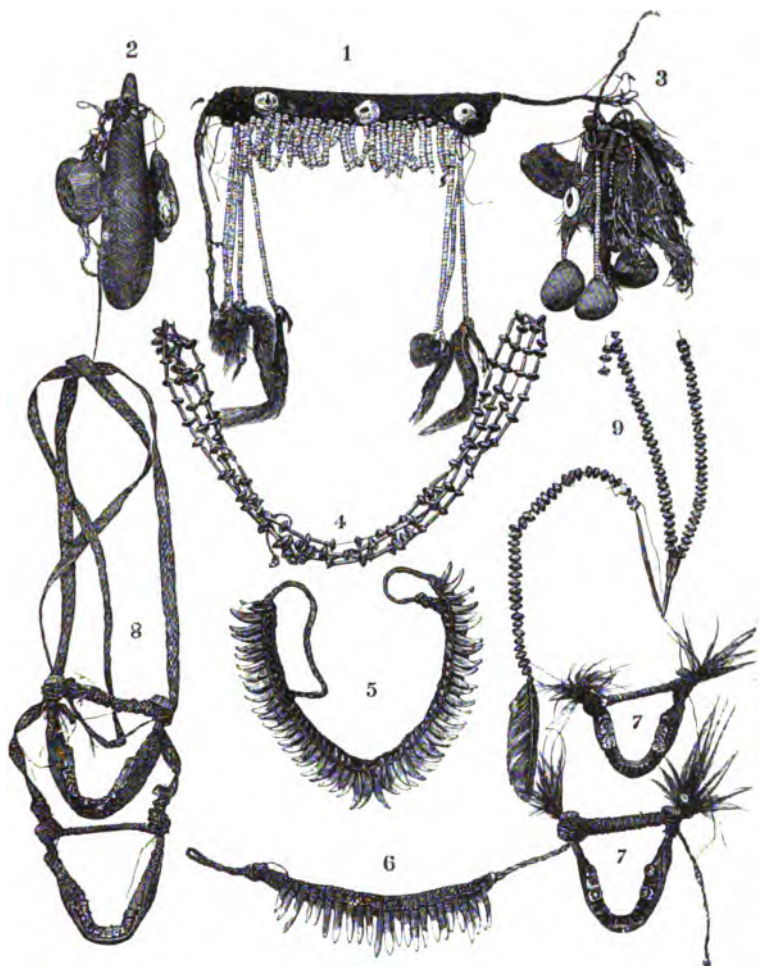
We find that the women are all tattooed, and that they clothe themselves with a kind of garment, which as far as we know, is not used in any other part of New Guinea.<sup>3</sup> They also adorn themselves with human bones, which is not the custom with other Papuan women.

In place of bows and arrows, we find well-made spear-heads, also stone-nails.

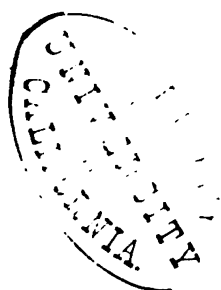
Considering all these facts, the traveller will admit he is among either a new people or a mixed people. He can scarcely hold to the first hypothesis, in presence of a type which recalls the Papuans of other parts; perceiving the great differences both in type and in customs, he will be convinced that he has before him a mixed race.

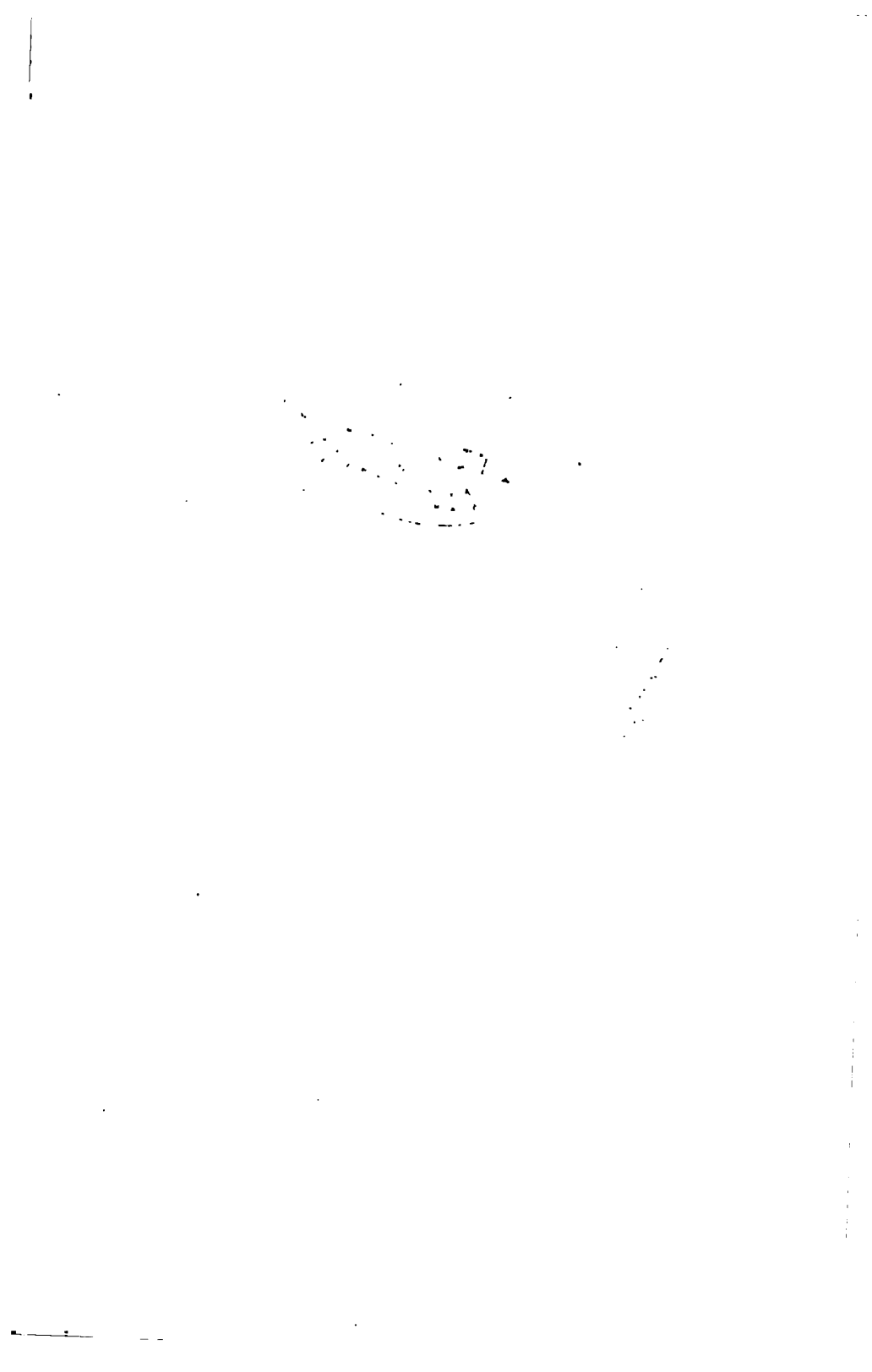
Among the people dwelling near Yule Island, and also among the inhabitants of Moatta and the Fly, we shall observe a very similar state of things.

<sup>3</sup> It will be seen hereafter that it is in general use.



1. Headdress—Fly River.
2. Gourd for lime—Fly River and Hall Sound.
3. Breast adornments—Hall Sound.
4. Seeds necklace—Fly River.
- 5, 6. Dogs' and pigs'-teeth necklaces—Fly River and Hall Sound.
- 7, 7. Human-jaw armlets—Fly River, Orangerie Bay, and Moatta.
8. Human-jaw necklace—Fly River.
9. Headdress—Fly River.









Vincent Brooks Day & Son Ltd

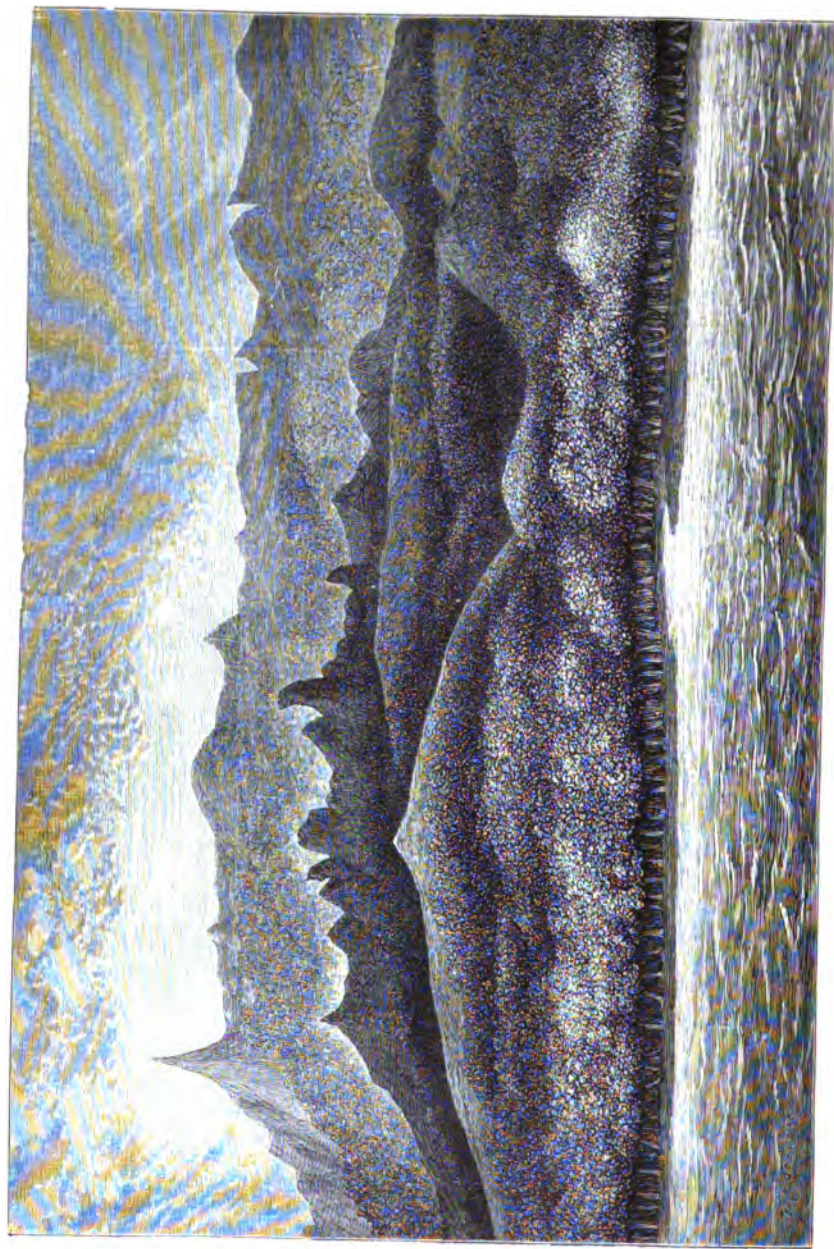
PARADISEA RAGGIANA

London: Vincent Brooks Day & Son Ltd









MOUNT YULE RANGE, SEEN FROM YULE ISLAND.

# A VOYAGE TO YULE ISLAND IN 1875.

## CHAPTER I.

I resolve to return to Andai—I change my purpose—My reasons—I decide on exploring Yule Island—Somerset—What the Naturalist may do there—Insects—I become a nocturnal animal—Ants—Birds—The human inhabitants—Their manners and customs—Captain Redlich—Tawan—Rocky hills—Darnley Island—A beautiful landscape—The natives.

WHEN, towards the end of 1872, after some severe attacks of fever, my enfeebled health obliged me to leave Andai, I did so with a fixed intention of returning thither. The mountain range of Arfak dwelt in my imagination; the treasures I had discovered there spoke plainly of many more to be found, and I ardently longed to continue the work I had begun. My discovery of a new bird of paradise when on board the "Vittor Pisani," on my visit to Orangerie Bay, at the extreme eastern point of New Guinea, in the beginning of 1873, and the sight of the lofty chain of the Owen Stanley Mountains, had diverted my attention too much from the north of New Guinea. I was also convinced that a not less fertile field for exploration existed in the south-east portion of the island. Here, too, the field was still virgin and unexplored; and when I left Orangerie Bay I said to

myself, as the mountains of Owen Stanley faded from my gaze, "I shall see them again." But my recovery was slow; ten months passed before the fever left me.

At the end of 1873, news reached Sydney that Dr. Mayer, a German, had made an excursion to Andai, that his native hunters had gained the top of Mount Arfak, and that they had returned with a multitude of strange things. Besides, Dr. Beccari proposed to return to Andai, with the object of ascending the peaks of Mount Arfak, to collect not only plants, but animals also. The return of H.M.S. "Basilisk" from New Guinea towards the end of 1873, the reports of the officers and sailors on this unknown land of enchantment, made me abandon the idea of returning to Andai, and resolve instead on going to explore some point on the south-east coast.

Full of this project, but not yet completely restored to health, I bade a temporary adieu, on the 20th of December, 1873, to Australia and the beautiful city of Sydney.

Having touched at the Fiji Islands, I breathed the balmy air of Honolulu in the Sandwich Isles for two months, and my health sensibly improved from day to day, while the hope of being able soon to return to New Guinea gave me fresh strength. From the Sandwich Islands I went to San Francisco, to the city of the Mormons, to the Falls of Niagara, to Chicago, and finally to New York. In the middle of April I arrived in Europe, and began my preparations for a second journey.

On the 10th of November, 1874, I left Naples for

Singapore and Cape York, Australia, from which latter point I intended to start for New Guinea. I had fixed upon Yule Island as the scene of my explorations.

The vicinity of Yule Island to Somerset (Cape York), where there is a European settlement, the monthly packet service between Sydney and Europe, the fact that I could take the same route as that used by the missionaries to visit the mission at Port Moresby, and lastly, the propinquity of a chain of lofty mountains, of which Mount Yule is the highest peak—all influenced me in coming to this decision.

On the 27th of December, 1874, I disembarked at Somerset, in company with Signor Tomasinelli (a young Genoese), and two Cingalese youths, whom I engaged as servants at Point de Galle. I soon found two friends in the Rev. S. Macfarlane, head of the mission in Torres Straits, and Mr. Applin, police magistrate, to whom I had brought letters of introduction. Owing to the courtesy of the latter gentleman, I obtained a small house wherein to lodge and put all my baggage in order. Although Somerset is a European settlement, there are no inns, and the few houses belong to the Government of Queensland and the missionaries.

The house which fell to my lot was in reality the prison of the settlement. It consisted of two small rooms with doors, and a larger one with neither door nor window. I had the use of the latter, and also of one of the rooms with a door, to store my baggage in; the other had to be kept vacant for prisoners. It is hot at Somerset, and

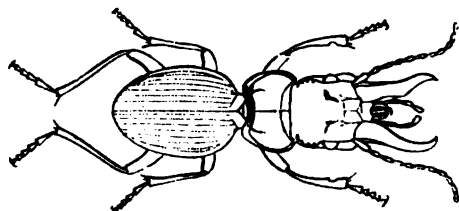


doors and windows are really unnecessary. It is true that at night I occasionally ran the risk of being crushed flat while I slept by a stray horse or cow, or gnawed by a hungry dog; but with these exceptions, and setting aside the fact that there were no chairs, beds, tables, or articles of furniture of any kind, I may say the house was good and convenient. Situated at the rear of a hill, near the magistrate's house, it overlooked the little harbour of Albany, where the "Mail" stopped, and where the small craft employed in the mother-of-pearl fisheries anchored. From my house, which had an easterly aspect, I could see, on clear days, some of the islands in the Torres Straits, and notably Mount Adolphus. The house was surrounded by a level grass field, in which the few horses belonging to the Government, and some cows, grazed. Some "black troopers" with their wives inhabited a few cottages in the vicinity, and behind the hill were dense forests. On another hill to my left are the Police barracks, Mr. Macfarlane's house, and the cottages of the mission.

In the distance, inland, stretches a beautiful subtropical forest, or tracts covered only with the eucalyptus-tree and grass, then plains and marshes.

Somerset, although to a certain extent explored, presents a wide field for labour to the naturalist, and especially to the entomologist. Butterflies abound, of course at some seasons more than at others; a magnificent *Ornithoptera*, very common—one of the largest and most beautiful of its kind—is found here. Among the Cole-

optera are beautiful specimens of the *Buprestides*, *Cetonides*, *Carabids*, and *Longicorns*. Among the *Carabids*, the curious *Mecynognathus Damelii*



*Mecynognathus Damelii.*

deserves especial notice ; it is remarkable for the development of the mandibles and head, chiefly in the male. Although discovered about the year 1865, this insect was to be found only in the collection of Mr. W. Macleay of Sydney, who possessed one specimen of the kind. On one of my excursions into the forest, I succeeded in finding its traces not far from my cottage, and for many days I searched in vain for the living insect. Having obtained abundant proofs of its frequenting a certain locality, I buried some pots containing water, so that the edges were on a level with the ground. My stratagem was crowned with success, the next morning I found two magnificent specimens of this rare insect, drowned in the water. The season was perhaps unfavourable ; at any rate, I only succeeded in obtaining six of these insects in the month of January. On my return to Somerset in the following November, I resumed my search with more success ; and when I left the place, at the end of November, to follow Mr. Macfarlane to Fly River, I left large pots full of

water buried as before. What was my astonishment, on my return, to find thousands of these insects drowned in them. They were, however, owing to my long absence, all decayed, and I obtained only a small number of perfect specimens. I again buried the water pots for a week, but I secured only three more specimens. One of these I kept alive in a little box for twelve days, so that it arrived safely in Sydney. Never having succeeded in finding the insect by day, I have no doubt that its habits are nocturnal. Notwithstanding all my researches, I have never been able to discover how it lives. I believe though that a kindred species, *Trichosternus dilaticeps*, digs deep holes for itself in the sand, with which the soil of the forest abounds. It probably lives on putrid flesh, and seems to have been attracted to the vessels I have mentioned by the smell of putrefying animal matter. The *Trichosternus dilaticeps* is perhaps not less rare, and I could not find one at Somerset; although this insect is found in the island of Albany, living in holes about a foot deep in places where the long grass that covers nearly the whole of that island is closest. I myself became a nocturnal animal, in my anxiety to study the creature, and began to prowl out of my den at sunset. I never found more than one insect at a time.

If there be a place in the world which may claim supremacy in the possession of ants, it is Cape York. Ants great and small, of every form and colour, swarm everywhere, by day and by night.

Some live on the ground, some under it, some in old trunks of trees, others under stones,

and others on plants and trees. Some are innocuous, others harmful; some are timid, others bold. The worst I know are green, and build their habitations on trees, so that they resemble birds' nests. These dwellings are formed of leaves, stuck together by a sort of tissue-like spider's web, and are strong enough to resist the rain and wind at most seasons. The trees are literally covered with them, and any one approaching would be instantly assailed by myriads of little insects, whose bite is excessively painful. When they have bitten they do not release their hold, and there is no way of ridding oneself from them, except by killing them. A curious species of ant lives in the trunks or at the roots of rotting trees; they are the deepest black in colour, and their bite is most annoying. They possess a property which I do not think has ever yet been described—that of jumping backwards, having collected themselves into a mass. When jumping, they emit a sound like that produced by some species of *Elatérides*.

Talking of ants, I may here mention the most interesting case of mimicry I have ever met with. The young of a species of bug live on the same plants as the green ants which I have mentioned, and so closely resemble them that they can only be distinguished from the ants after attentive observation. There is no doubt that these bugs escape many of their enemies by their likeness to the ferocious and pugnacious insect. In colour and form they are perfect copies.

We now come to those cunning builders, the termites. When I arrived at Somerset I was sur-

prised to see columns and pyramids, both on the plains and on the crests of the hills; and I asked whether they had been erected by the natives. Many travellers refuse to believe that these monuments are the work of a little insect. The wonder is still greater when one examines the insect itself, which, from its form and fragility, would appear to be incapable of accomplishing such labour. The outside of these pyramids, which are made of earth and sand, are sufficiently wonderful, in themselves; but when (with, I must confess, a barbarous hand) one makes a sectional cut into one of these dwellings, the admirable construction of the galleries, magazines, and cells, wherein the little creatures keep their stores and bring up their larvæ, fill one with amazement. I measured several of the ant-hills, which were ten feet high, and thirteen feet round the base. I often found the buildings of the termites inhabited by a great black ant, which is probably hostile to them. In some cases the termites were completely destroyed, in others they were on the way to extermination, and the black invaders were enjoying the stores collected by the termites.

I found but few interesting birds. Among the most curious I may mention the *megapodius* and the *tallegallus*—birds which pile up great heaps of earth, in which they hide their eggs, which the heat helps to hatch. Perhaps because the earth is sandy, and easily moved by their strong claws, the mounds built by these birds in the interior of Somerset are the largest I have ever seen. Some of them measure eighteen feet in height, and eighty-seven in circumference at the base.

Cape York is not more than between eighty and a hundred miles from New Guinea, and the sea which separates them is dotted with little islands at short distances apart; the forest is luxuriant, and there are some species of birds common to both countries, and yet there is but one species of bird of paradise at Cape York, the *Ptiloris magnifica*. Some ornithologists contend that this bird is altogether a distinct species from that found in New Guinea; and there certainly are differences in the dimensions of the birds in the two places; still I, who have seen and heard them, cannot but believe, even at the risk of finding myself at issue with scientific naturalists, that they are one and the same species. What I say of this bird, I also say of the *Manucodia Gouldii*, which, according to many, is identical with the *Manucodia Keraudrenii* of New Guinea.

The few mammiferous animals I met with are not worth mention. Among the reptiles I may note some pythons, the flying dragon, and the poisonous *Acantophis antartica* as worthy of remark. Reptiles, especially serpents, abound.

Are the inhabitants of this part of Australia aborigines? I saw only a few of them, and can say little about them; but I observed that they in no wise resemble the inhabitants of Clarence River, New South Wales, or those of Queensland. To compare them with the latter was an easy task for me, for all the black troopers came from Rockhampton. Those of Cape York were taller, and their hair was more glossy; they were also thinner and less muscular, and were certainly of a lower type. I observed that they differed ma-

terially from the inhabitants of Prince of Wales Island; they live a nomadic life in the forest, have no houses, and shelter themselves from the wind and rain with boughs. They venerate the dead, and surround their graves with a palisade, which generally consists of four tree-trunks painted red. I never saw weapons, food, or ornaments placed on the graves, but I have sometimes, though very rarely, seen shells laid on them. Their weapons are lances and boomerangs. Tobacco is smoked in bamboo pipes. The natives frequently suffer from sore eyes. They have roughly made canoes, and always go about accompanied by half-starved dogs. I thought, from what had been said to me at Somerset, that I should have been able, without difficulty, to engage men to go with me to New Guinea, as well as a boat to carry us to Yule Island; I hoped, too, that the Rev. Mr. Macfarlane would have helped me to do this. But, when I arrived at Somerset, I found myself mistaken. The mother-of-pearl fishers are always in need of assistants, and it was an utter impossibility for them to find any for me, while I encountered difficulties on the part of Mr. Macfarlane respecting the boat, probably on account of my baggage. On one occasion I had succeeded in chartering a vessel, and had determined to start, accompanied only by my companion and the two Cingalese; but a difference arose between the captain and myself, and as he wished to break the bargain he had made, I declined to have anything to do with his ship, and was on the point of returning to Batavia to organize my expedition from that place, when good luck brought Captain Redlich,

a German and a mother-of-pearl fisher, whom I met at Sorong in 1872, to Somerset. He had men with him belonging to the islands of New Britain in the New Hebrides; and it appeared that Captain Redlich, by an Act passed by the Australian Colonies, called the Polynesian Act, had incurred the risk of having his ship confiscated, by employing these people in the mother-of-pearl fisheries in the waters of Queensland.

The Police Magistrate, having to deal with a German, had not the courage to confiscate the ship; on the other hand, instigated by the other pearl fishers, he did not want to allow a foreigner to encroach on so-called Polynesian privileges—that is, to avail himself of an advantage which was denied to British subjects. Captain Redlich, therefore, did not know but that he might be captured at any moment.

All this turned to my advantage. The magistrate was delighted to see the men leave Queensland waters; the captain to escape from the danger hanging over him; and I, above all, to find men where I least expected such good fortune. I arranged with Captain Redlich that I would take sixteen Polynesians with me, five of whom were women, and that he should convey me to Yule Island for a stipulated sum.

All arrangements being complete, we commenced the wearisome preparations for our voyage, and the 5th of March was fixed upon for our departure from Somerset. Before leaving, I arranged that Mr. Applin should act as my agent. Mr. Macfarlane promised to come and see me at Yule Island, on his way to or from Port Moresby,



should opportunity offer, and undertook to procure supplies for me up to the end of May.

On the 5th of March we sailed from Somerset in the cutter "Ida," directing our course to Cornwallis Island or Tawan, where Captain Redlich's ship was stationed. Owing to bad weather, we did not reach Tawan until the 7th, when we anchored about five hundred yards from the beach, opposite a little village. As we landed we were saluted with a tropical shower of rain. The island is hilly, and three or four of the peaks are from five to six hundred feet high. The hills are probably of granite formation.

The few natives we have yet seen are certainly not Australians, but they also differ quite as much from the Papuans whom I have hitherto seen. They have very retreating foreheads, aquiline, or, as I should call them, camel-noses, and short receding chins. Their lips are thick, and protrude almost at an acute angle. Their hair is curly and crisp. The facial angle is sharp. The colour of the skin is black, but not intensely so. They are well proportioned and well developed.

The next day, after I had settled affairs with the captain, I made an excursion to the mountain, and was astonished at the sight of the colossal masses of granite of which it is formed. Whence, I asked myself, were those huge masses precipitated, or what power raised them on high? How were they heaped one upon another, in a thousand fantastic shapes, forming caves, grottoes, pits, and precipices? In the interstices there is neither earth nor sand. I descended for more than thirty feet

into one of the caves without reaching the bottom. Who can tell the depth of some of the other fissures?

The higher I climbed the hill, the larger were the blocks of stone. Some, furrowed and worn by the action of water, recalled vividly to my mind the effect of snow on the rocks of the Italian Alps. Oh for a geologist from whom I might learn their origin and history! I found on them several beautiful ferns of kinds which love shade and temperate heat; I also saw a gecko, the colour of the stone itself; and probably many other interesting animals live in these recesses, either to avoid the sunshine or to escape from their foes. I cannot say much for the fauna; the few insects I saw seemed to me exactly the same as those I found at Cape York. The plants, too, have a look of Australia about them; but the bamboo abounds. The aspect of the country is Australian, although from the vicinity of the island to New Guinea, from which it is separated by a channel only a few miles in breadth, it cannot be regarded as other than Papuan.

We left Tawan on the 9th. On the 10th, having no wind, we anchored off Warrior Reef for the night. On the 11th, sailing with a fair wind between Warrior Reef and Dungeness Island, we took our course by Bramble Bay. In the afternoon the breeze died away, and we had to anchor for the night off the little island of Rennel, called Mauar by the natives. The whole day, but more especially towards noon, there were great flights of bird bee-eaters (*Merops ornatus*), large

flocks of them following one another without intermission.

At low tide I saw several pelicans, probably the *Pelecanus conspicillatus*, on the rocks from which the water had receded. On the 12th, with a fair breeze, we passed near all the small islands, which almost form a small archipelago and towards night we ran the risk of being dashed by strong currents on the coral rocks which surround the eastern part of Darnley Island. We soon neared that island, but were forced to lie to all night for want of wind, and because the depth was so great we could not find bottom.

On the morning of the 13th we were quite close to Darnley Island, and I was very much pleased at being able to land, while the captain refilled his water-tanks.

The island presents an enchanting view from the sea, with its summits clad in bright green, where the vegetation is luxuriant, with its valleys where the lovely palm cocoa-nut and bamboo flourish, with its sloping plains of rich verdure, for the grass grows here as it grows in fertile European meadows. A coloured missionary, from the island of Tonga, is stationed here. To find my way to his house, I had to cross the whole breadth of the island. Fortunately I found a path through the dense forest, by which I climbed to the top of a high hill, whence I enjoyed the contemplation of one of those charming landscapes with which the island abounds. I passed through gardens, where I saw yams, sweet potatoes, and sugar-cane in great quantities, and also bananas,

cocoa-nuts, and papaw. I saw some houses, but they were all deserted, and probably only serve as a temporary shelter during the cultivation of the fields. Then, descending on the other side, I discerned a zinc roof, in the midst of a plantation of bananas and sugar-cane, and thought this must be the abode of the teacher. I made my way to it by a path through the middle of a beautiful meadow.

I found the teacher stretched at full length under the shade of a large tree, with a Bible open beside him, which he appeared to be studying deeply. His wife and children stood near him. He received us cordially, and offered us some cocoa-nuts. After exchanging a few words, I took leave, and went on to the native village on the sea shore. On my way I picked up some insects, and saw a specimen of a *Pitta simillima*, which is also an inhabitant of Cape York. When I came to the village, I found the houses were constructed in two ways, some being like beehives, the others four-sided, and I was told the former are built in imitation of the missionary's house. These beehive-shaped houses are quite new to me in New Guinea; but, if I remember rightly, the natives live in similar houses in New Caledonia. Both kinds are well constructed. and their supports, all made of bamboo, are cleverly designed. The doors are so low that one is forced to enter them on one's hands and knees, and they have no windows. They are all completely surrounded by a high stockade of bamboos, which encloses a large space covered with white sand, where the natives stretch themselves at full

length in common with the numerous dogs and cats imported by the missionaries. Women and children are numerous; I saw a small number of men, most of them being away fishing, and only a few girls. It is the custom to kill the female children at the birth, as I was told by the missionary, and, in proof of his assertion, he showed me a pretty little girl whom he had adopted to save her from a



A Darnley Island Man.

premature death. In one of the houses I saw four women, with their faces daubed all over with yellow, and their hair and bodies with ashes. They had fringes of grass on their necks, arms, and legs. Asking the reason of these decorations, I was told the wearers were "in mourning."

The men use bows and arrows. They are not very tall, but robust, well-built and well proportioned. Their skin is darkish; their features are not elongated. Their superorbital arches are not very prominent. Their eyes are large, and full

of expression. The faces of the women entitle them to be called pretty; they wear their hair short. The men, on the contrary, are proud of their hair, and, in order to obtain more beautiful curls, take great care of it; they cover the head for some time with a paste made of chalk, which does not, however, affect the colour of the hair. The hair of the adults appears to be crisp, but that probably is due to art, for I observed that the hair of the women and children is not twisted or in tufts, but matted and only slightly wavy. The men also wear wigs, which the women make very ingeniously for them. These wigs consist of a number of curls attached to a kind of cap; the length of the curls varies from four to six inches. The cap is kept on the head by a strip of bark which passes under the chin. The lobes of their ears are two or three inches in length, and perforated to admit of bead earrings; they also wear bead necklaces and chains, and adorn themselves by tinting their skins with a red clay which they procure from New Guinea, and which they esteem highly. This they previously bake in the fire, using for the purpose a special kind of wood. While this operation is going on, they put the flowers of the hibiscus suspended on small reeds, on the fire.

They do not crouch like the Papuans of the north, but rather sit like the Malays, placing one leg over the other, not both under them. They are not nude, but slightly clothed—especially the women—with leaves and grass. They appear to venerate their dead, and preserve them by embalming and desiccation. I saw the corpse thus preserved

of the husband of one of the prettiest women in the country, he having been dead over a year. He still occupied the nuptial chamber, standing in the



Darnley Island Mummy.<sup>1</sup>

middle of the house, attached to a kind of upright ladder of poles. In the semi-obscurity of the room, his eyes seemed still to have life in them, so skilfully were they coloured. He wore his necklace, his wrists and legs were adorned with rings of shells, and on his forehead was a plaited crown of the finest grass, also brightly coloured. He was otherwise perfectly naked. They tint him from time to time with red chalk, and keep his skin soft by anointing it with coconut oil. Who can tell whether such pious care emanates from mere custom, or is the offspring of a noble and tender feel-

ing? They do not always preserve the whole body, but sometimes only the head. Now, owing, perhaps, to the ideas introduced among them by the missionaries, they more generally bury their dead, in which case they adorn the

<sup>1</sup> I am indebted to Professor Flower, of the College of Surgeons, for this drawing.

grave with emblems, figures, &c. One of the natives pointed out to me, with a certain complacency, the grave in which he had deposited the body of his mother. She lay in a pit, dug in the sand, and not far from the sea. The devoted son had planted a young cocoa-nut tree at her head, and a sugar-cane at her feet. He hopes the tree and the cane will both bear good fruit, and has more faith in the supernatural virtues of the departed one than in the efficacy of the chemical properties of a decomposed body.



Darnley Island, Torres Strait.

An axe, the property of the dead woman, was planted near the sugar-cane, and two wooden tortoises, a gourd, a large marine shell, and other objects which had belonged to her, were suspended from the top of a paling.

These natives seem to have some regard for personal cleanliness, and their houses are kept



neat and clean, as well as the enclosed space and the environs of the houses. They live chiefly on fish, which abound near the island, and on those products of the land which I have already mentioned. They appear lively and vivacious, and readily talk with strangers. I was told that they are of a peaceable disposition. They are accustomed to the use of tobacco, which they smoke in a long pipe of bamboo, made like a flute, with a small pipe at one end containing the tobacco. They swallow a large quantity of smoke, which they exhale at intervals. They have no religion, and are by no means easily converted to Christianity. They constantly suffer from skin diseases, and the stomachs of the children are greatly distended. I saw a woman whose breasts had been cut off, and the operation had succeeded wonderfully.

With sunrise, on the morning of the 14th, a fair wind began to blow, and we bade adieu to the lovely island of Darnley with an ardent desire to see it again. It is well worthy of the attention of naturalists, although almost all the birds I saw were the same as those I had found at Cape York.

The wind, however, soon carried us out of sight, and who knows whether my wish will ever be fulfilled? On the 15th the wind still blew hard, a dense mist prevented our seeing the land, and the clouded sky hindered us from ascertaining our position exactly.

## CHAPTER II.

A Storm, followed by a pleasant surprise—I land on Yule Island—"The Queen"—Friendly Natives—We come to terms—Naimi—I select the site of my house, and it is marked out—I take possession and make payment—The Natives make acquaintance with my gun—Tent-pitching *en attendant*—Midnight visits—A regular invasion—Pleasant weather, and friendly relations—House-warming—The "Ellangowan" again.

ON the morning of the 16th, at sunrise, a gale arose, which became a tempest later, and we were very near losing a good boat which we were towing astern. When the mist and clouds dispersed, what was our surprise and delight to find ourselves only a few miles from Yule Island. In the background, and at a greater distance, the peak of Yule Mountain rose like a giant. That was indeed a joyful moment. Although for some hours the wind had wafted the fragrant odours of flowers to us, telling us of land, we could not believe we were so near our goal. At half-past ten we passed the coral bar and were becalmed. Tacking, we sailed along the west coast of the island, and then, turning north-north-east, we cast anchor almost in the middle of Hall Sound, over against some native huts, and several canoes which were on the beach.

A canoe, with two men on board, rowed in

our direction, but kept a little way off, until at last, after many invitations, they came on board, and I had an opportunity of observing them. They seemed to me quite a distinct race from the Papuans, both in face and colour. Little by little, they gained confidence, and hailed other canoes, which came at once, and by the aid of a few small presents we were soon on good terms. Presently a woman of an almost European type, and tattooed all over with curious designs, came close alongside, and offered us a terracotta jar containing some boiled bananas. I rewarded her politeness with some beads, which she seemed to prize highly. All the natives present appeared to hold her in respect; she is, no doubt, the wife of a chief. We called her "the Queen," owing to her noble appearance and imperious manner. Had she not been disfigured, in our eyes, by being tattooed, she might have been called a beautiful woman, and in any case she is very singular in appearance.

In the afternoon we landed, and found about fifty natives encamped on the shore near some gigantic trees. They had lighted fires and were cooking bananas. The queen was sitting at the foot of the tallest tree, surrounded by all the rest of the natives, men and women, over whom she seems to exercise great authority. I went straight up to her, although some natives tried to stop me, and held out my hand in sign of peace. I presented her with a fine necklace of Venetian pearls, with which she seemed much pleased, although she trembled slightly. In the eyes of this woman, pride and authority

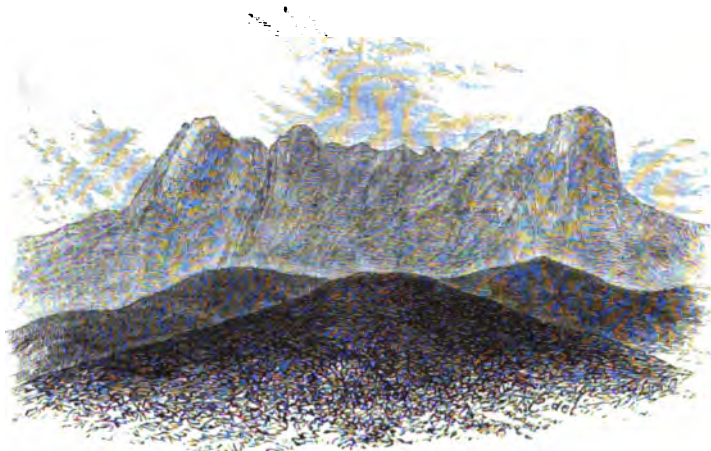
might be read, and perhaps ferocity too. Who can she be? Perhaps we shall be able to find out. We were then surrounded by all the natives, men, women, and children, the latter being decidedly the least timid. I was astonished to find myself confronted with people with smooth hair and yellowish brown skins, in which a fine carnation glowed. When our mutual curiosity was somewhat satisfied, I endeavoured to make friends with them through the medium of small presents, and then proceeded to explain by signs the object of my coming. They informed me that there was no drinking-water on the opposite coast, where I intended to settle, but they signified that their island was well provided with it, from which it was clear to me that I must remain there. I explained by signs that I meant to establish myself among them, to buy a piece of land and build a house. They seemed to understand me perfectly, and to consent. I promised to pay them in cloth, knives, axes, &c., and it was settled by signs that I should land the next morning to conclude the bargain. Having arranged this, I returned on board, well satisfied with my day's work.

Now it is night, all is still; on the beach huge fires are blazing.

*March 17th.*—After breakfast I went on shore, accompanied by Signor Tomasinelli, the two Cingalese, and five of my Polynesians. Some of the men were armed, and others carried the things with which I intended to pay for the land, and the building of my house. I took with me my revolver and double-barrelled gun.

I again found the queen at her post of yesterday; she smiled softly, and stretched out her hand, pointing to me, and presenting a man whom I take to be her husband. His name is Naimi; he is a fine man, strongly built, and of prepossessing appearance.

I explained my intentions afresh, and was permitted to select the site for my house. Accompanied by Signor Tomasinelli and several natives, I ascended a hill, from which I could see a large portion of the bay, and the opposite coast of New Guinea, only a few miles away. What more than anything else decided me to select this site was, that from it I had a fine



The Owen Stanley.

view of the whole mountain chain, which extends from the peak of Mount Yule as far as Mount Owen Stanley.

From the beach to this place, which seemed to me best adapted as a site for a house, was a

space of about six hundred and fifty yards ; covered on the hill-side with long grass, in the valley with reeds. The vegetation close to the sea shore, on a promontory which extended somewhat into the bay to the east, and inland to the top of the hill, was luxuriant.

Having selected the site, I made the natives understand that this was the place I wanted for my house, and I showed them what was the extent of the land I wished to buy—about one thousand yards—and for this I showed them how much I was prepared to give. Three of the natives, among whom was Naimi, conversed together for some time in an animated manner, and then, as if they were agreed, they made signs to me that they accepted my proposal. Four young men were sent to the four angles of the square which I had demanded, and set fire to the long grass within the settled limits. Presently, a sort of black veil was spread over that part of the island ; the natives made signs to me that the black portion was mine, and that which was outside its bounds was theirs. I handed them all I had promised, and they received the articles with shouts of joy.

Some hawks, attracted by the smoke, flew over our heads, looking for the grasshoppers and reptiles which had been driven out by the flames ; and I seized that opportunity to show the natives what sort of things our guns are. I killed two hawks (*Milvus affinis*) with two successive shots. The natives were terrified at the report, but their wonder at seeing the two poor birds fall down from on high was still greater

than their fright. I quieted them by signs ; and they all then wished to see, touch, and examine the two birds, showing their astonishment by their gestures, their animated chatter, and a peculiar shooting out of their tongues.

On returning with them to their encampment, I found the women had taken possession of the things I had given their husbands, and had adorned themselves with the beads and coloured cloths. They appeared, like all the daughters of Eve, very fond of beautifying themselves and attracting attention.

I believe that at the small cost of some little presents to the women, and a few caresses to the children, I have captivated the hearts of these people, who seem simple and good. The queen especially shows herself well disposed towards me, and always readily gives me her hand on my arrival at, or departure from, the camp. I observed that no one gave the right hand to me, and that, unlike Europeans, the natives use the left hand much more than the right.

While I was on shore, some canoes came from the mainland, bringing from fifteen to twenty persons. They were adorned with the feathers of various birds, among which I observed those of *Paradisea Raggiana* and of *Dasiptylus pesqueti*. I cannot describe my pleasure on recognizing the feathers of both those birds, but especially of the former. The hope of finding it had brought me, I may say, to this part of New Guinea, and, although it was most probable that I should meet with it, now my success is certain, for on this first day I have seen the natives

wearing its feathers, and I know that I shall find it in the forest. The people who came with the canoes were very stiff in their manner to us, and it was impossible to obtain anything from them for barter. Only just as they were about to depart did they offer us some bananas and cocoa-nuts. Among them I observed a man whose face was tinged with black, like one I saw yesterday. I noticed that both were aged men. Their heads are covered with a kind of cloth made of bark.

*March 17th.*—To-day, very early in the morning, and before we landed, some natives came in two canoes, bringing the grass mats they promised me yesterday.

After breakfast I landed with my men, to pitch a tent for ourselves and our stores, until the house we are about to construct shall be ready.

During the day several canoes arrived, bringing whole families; but I remarked that all the women I had seen on the previous days were absent, and it was explained to me that they had gone away from the island. After I returned on board for dinner, a canoe came alongside with fifteen men, and a woman, who was quite young, and pretty as well as refined-looking and sprightly. She wanted to see, touch, and take everything, and seemed quite astonished that all her wishes were not gratified. I believe, however, that I sent her home perfectly contented with the presents I made her. When I returned on shore, I was surprised to find all the natives gone; we discovered three of them a little later, spying at what we were doing, from a place where they thought themselves



unseen. We had begun to disembark our boxes, but suspended our work in order that these natives might not see what we had, lest we might excite not only their curiosity but also their cupidity. They at length approached us. One of them was very black, and his head was covered with a cloth, which hung down over his shoulders. His manner was not calculated to inspire us with confidence. At sunset I set about getting the rest of the baggage disembarked, as not only I, but all the others, counted on sleeping under the tent that night. Owing to the mosquitoes, and perhaps also to the novelty of our situation, not one of us could sleep at all.

At half-past ten I was called by one of the men whom I had posted as sentry outside the tent. Several men had landed from two canoes near to where we were. I made all the haste I could, but did not reach the beach in time to see them, I only saw the canoes, which were retreating precipitately. I did not like these nocturnal visits, and, to cure the natives of repeating them, I lighted some Bengal fire on the beach, and fired my gun in the air.

*March 19th.*—The night passed quietly, and early this morning I went on board the “*Ida*,” and handed my letters to Captain Redlich, who had decided to sail during the day.

I took leave of the captain and returned on shore. While I was superintending the building of the house, which was begun, I was startled by the noise of many voices, and the measured beating of drums by the natives. The sounds gradually approached, appearing to come

from the middle of the bay, which we could not see, for the view was impeded by a hill. On land there was not a native to be seen, nor was a canoe visible on the sea, and I stood trying to find out what all this noise meant, when I beheld a monstrous construction in the water. It was larger than the cutter "Ida." I could not make out its shape, because it was covered with mats. There were two things like masts, from which hung festoons of braided and coloured grass. It carried a curious sail, the like of which I never saw before, narrowing to a point below, thence widening to the centre, and then bifurcating and forming two horns like those of a crescent. It was crowded with men, and was steering towards our encampment. Anticipating an attack, I at once ordered my men to form a stockade, with the boughs and trunks of trees, all around our tent, while I put our guns and revolvers in readiness, and, after the manner of Orsini, charged some bombs, determined to sell my life very dearly, if necessary. Before the monster was in front of us, we were ready to defend ourselves. In the meantime, a second machine like the first appeared in its rear, and soon afterwards two more, of the same shape and size, were seen at the southern entrance to the bay. Natives swarmed in all of them.

I then thought they had certainly come to attack us, and that they had formed a plan for preventing the escape of the "Ida," by barring her passage with the two last machines, which had reached the entrance to the bay. This was a serious state of things; for I knew Captain

Redlich could not make head against such numerous foes, as he had only one white man and three blacks on board, and I was aware he had only one good gun and a revolver. We stood on the beach watching the movements of these four machines of war, which I cannot call canoes, for they were too large, when an ordinary canoe, with about fifteen natives on board, armed with stone clubs, axes, and spears, came to the shore not far from us. I went alone to meet them, and find out their intentions. The fact that no women or children were to be seen, their arms, and the confused sound of voices which arose from the bay, led me to believe that their intentions were anything but pacific. However, I went up to them, endeavoured to make them understand that, if they came as friends, I would treat them as such; but if as enemies, I was ready for them, and, the better to explain my meaning, I made signs that, if they went even so far as to brandish a spear, I would fire upon them. I then pointed my gun at them. But they explained (always by signs) that they came as friends. As such they were welcome, and, throwing aside my gun, I shook hands with a man who seemed to be one of their chiefs. They understood what I wished to convey to them, and, exchanging the grave aspect with which they had arrived for smiles, they laid aside their weapons. In the meantime the wind had carried the four monsters, which had caused us such alarm, far from us. They passed the "Ida" at about two hundred yards' distance, without molesting her in any way, or even noticing her

presence. In less than an hour they had disappeared behind the point of the bar, steering to the east.

The natives tried to explain to me by signs that it was a case of fighting, slaying men, and many other things which I could not understand, as I did not know their language. The rest of the day passed without further incident.

Towards evening a number of natives, including several women and children, arrived at the island. A canoe belonging to a very old man, who was travelling with his two wives—as old as himself—was left high and dry between two rocks, and the poor old man could not succeed in getting afloat. I took some of my men to his aid, and we managed to free his canoe; he and his wives signified their gratitude to me; and our action appears to have been favourably commented on by the rest, who stood idly looking on. The captain put off his departure until to-morrow.

*March 20th.* — This morning, at seven, the "Ida" sailed. A fresh breeze was blowing from the south, and the white sails were soon lost to view. The captain and I saluted one another with our respective flags. Now, as I write, it appears strange to me that I felt no emotion as I lost sight of the ship, notwithstanding that I recollect thinking yesterday I should experience some at losing my only means of escape from the natives, should they turn out to be less well disposed than I suppose, or at least than I desire. But now the "Ida" is gone, and we are left alone to our destiny. There are, at any rate, a fair number of us; we are well armed, and we can

defend ourselves, should occasion arise, against twenty times our number. They might, it is true, get the better of us by treachery, burn our house when it is built, and annoy us in a thousand other ways, to which both savages and civilized beings know how to resort when excited by passion. Against such eventualities, however, I know of an excellent resource, and one which I would advise all young explorers to adopt. I would say to them, "Become fatalists. If your philosophy leads you to disbelieve in fatalism as a principle, you are mistaken; put your philosophy aside and become fatalists. Armed with fatalism danger is met, whatever it may be; men and the elements are defied, and a man of common average courage becomes as brave as a lion."

Fatalism, I say, destroys danger, because the fatalist believes that he cannot escape his destiny, be it good or bad, and that it is useless for him to try. Nevertheless, he does not neglect to employ every means which reason and circumstances suggest as useful, if not necessary, for self-preservation, in so far as that depends upon himself.

Our armament is composed of twelve breech-loading double-barrelled guns, and a double-barrelled rifle, with which explosives may be used. To prevent any mistakes arising about the cartridges, they are all twelve-bore. We have, in addition, five six-chambered revolvers, and ten Orsini shells.

We number twenty souls, namely—two whites, myself and my companion; two Cingalese, John the cook, and a boy of sixteen named Arnold, who acts as servant and preserver of birds, &c.,

four natives from the island of New Britain—Tambuabua, Tannau, Tomidel, and Tammana. These men are so black, their hair is so crisp and woolly, and their features so marked that they remind me strongly of the negro. They differ in every respect and to such an extent from the others, who belong to the New Hebrides, that I cannot doubt that they belong to a totally different race. They are literally savages ; and I will not inquire what destiny has dragged them from their inhospitable shores to make them mother-of-pearl fishers. They prefer to go about completely nude, according to the custom of their country, and when we disembarked in Yule Island I saw that their nakedness was displeasing to the natives, especially to the women, and I ordered them to cover themselves, at least as far as decency required. When the natives heard of my order, they expressed their satisfaction almost with gratitude. These four semi-brutes are very strong, their disposition is most intractable, they keep to themselves, and never mingle with the others. They are lazy and extremely stubborn. The rest, seven men and five women, are all natives of the New Hebrides. The colour of their skin is clear, yellowish, and in some instances reddish. Their hair is fuzzy, but not woolly. They are of low stature. Their disposition appears to be good and sociable, and they are on the best of terms with one another. They, like the others, are very lazy. Not one of all these people, except the Cingalese boy, can use fire-arms. I try to instruct them in the use of the gun, but most of them are so much afraid of it

that my efforts have hitherto been in vain. Tomidel is, however, more courageous than the others, and perhaps may one day be qualified to assist me in my shooting excursions.

The building progresses but slowly, and, seeing that the natives are not going to bring me the mats they promised, I have determined to roof the house with grass, which abounds in the island, and which, as it is very long and very coarse, is well adapted for the purpose. In the morning no natives appeared, but about noon three youths arrived in a canoe, not far from us, and began to adjust a mat to two props, by way of a sail. As I had to go to our encampment, and they had to pass close by our tent, I asked them to give me a lift in their canoe, to which they agreed, seeming pleased at my request. After dinner, the idea struck me that I would pay a visit to the natives, whose village I supposed to be situated in the centre of the island. I made my way to a plantation of bananas by a path along the valley formed by the two chains of mountains, which traverse the island from east to west. As I walked along I saw several quails flying before me. These birds live in the long grass through which the path winds.

When I arrived at the plantation, I could see neither village, house, nor natives; but I fired at a hawk, and ten natives debouched as if by magic, crying out, "Mia, mia!" I made signs to them to approach, and advanced towards them. They, however, continued to shout, "Mia, mia!" and made signs to me to take myself off. When I came up to them they signed to

me that I was on their territory, and that they desired me to go back to mine. I took their hands, however, in sign of friendship and peace, and made them understand that I had no wish to trespass on their land against their will, but only wanted to shoot birds and collect insects. I succeeded in restoring their confidence, and, when I was about to return to the encampment, I invited them to accompany me; this they did. On our arrival at the tent I laid aside my weapons, and began to show them several objects which excited their curiosity; and all they saw seemed to amuse and interest them. One of them left us, and shortly afterwards returned with three women and several children. The women presented me with some pots full of boiled bananas, in exchange for which I gave them beads. We passed the afternoon in trying to understand one another, laughing much at our respective modes of explanation. I tried to convey to them that they were wrong in not allowing me to go on their land, and one of them signified that he himself would come to-morrow to take me into his plantation, that with my gun I might kill the *Pteropus* (flying foxes), which were destroying his bananas. Thus they are already beginning to regard me as useful.

*March 22nd.*—To-day the old man whom some days ago I helped to extricate from his difficulties, when his canoe was hard and fast between the two rocks, came. He calls himself Yrupi. He presented me with some bananas, and refused to receive any recompense for them, signifying that they were in exchange for the service I had rendered



him; however, I made him take a knife and a looking-glass. After him came men, women, and children, in considerable numbers, to whom I administered shocks with a small electric machine. They were not a bit frightened, but wanted to prolong the experiment. They were, however, much alarmed at a volley from the revolver, and it took me some time to bring them back, for they fled precipitately. The most comical incident of the day, however, was when I took out of my pocket a phial containing pure alcohol, and having poured it into a shell, which I borrowed from the natives, set it on fire. The sun was shining brightly, and naturally hindered their seeing the peculiar faint light of the burning alcohol. They felt the heat of the flames without seeing them, and when I placed the shell in the shade, where they could see the bluish light they were struck with astonishment, and perhaps also with fear. This feat led them to take me for a magician, who by some means or other had been able to set water on fire—for who in their country had ever heard of water burning like fire? When their wonder had somewhat subsided, I went down to the edge of the sea, followed by the natives. I took a match, lighted it, and made as if I were going to set fire to the sea, as I had done to the water in the phial.

The poor simple natives were terrified, and conjured me not to do this. I graciously consented, and extinguished the match. They then explained that, if I had burned the sea, they would not have been able to return to their houses, that all the fish would have been killed, and they would have

had nothing to eat! Such is the simplicity of these people who still live in the stone age.

The man who two days ago had invited me to go to his plantation has now forbidden me to go there, because his women are afraid of me. I made fresh attempts to explore the island, but, whenever I came near their plantations, I was always met by natives who besought me to go away. I cannot understand the reason of this, for it does not seem that my presence in the island is distasteful to them, and I trust that, by means of civility and presents, I shall yet succeed in making friends of them.

To-day my two Cingalese said to me, "These people are like those of our country, though the colour of the skin of the Cingalese is much blacker." I pointed out to them that the hair of the natives we had seen is fuzzy. They replied that the Cingalese also would have fuzzy hair if they did not comb it, and dress it diligently every day with oil, which is certainly true so far as Arnold and John are concerned, for the hair of the former, who wears it short, is crisp, and that of the latter, who wears it long, is smooth. While not denying that there are many who resemble the type of my Cingalese, I must add that I saw the same type at Aden which I see here; and I believe that Micluko Maclay, the Russian, who, having seen the natives of the north-west of New Guinea, believed he had discovered the traces of the so-called Papuans at Borneo and Malacca, if he had seen the race now before me, would have gone much further to the west to trace the origin of the greater part of the Papuan tribes. The Arab

types of Aden, when brought here, would undoubtedly mix with those of the natives. However, there are such varieties in feature, the colour of the skin, and the nature and quality of the hair, that one is convinced that this is not a pure race, but a mixture of many races. The women especially present the strangest anomalies, and vary from the very lowest and coarsest to some who might be called handsome, and who would bear favourable comparison with many passably pretty Europeans, if they did not spoil themselves in our eyes by tattooing.

The colour of the skin varies from nearly black to the yellowish tint of the Chinese, and has all the intermediate gradations. I saw an old man with features marked with the quarterings of China, Batavia, and Singapore, who would not have created surprise if stated to be a foreigner among these people. And, besides this old man, I saw several children, who might pass for Chinese, on account of their squat features and the shape of their eyes.

There is no doubt that the natives begin to regard me with interest. They bring me the knives I presented to them, that I may sharpen them on my revolving grindstone, which, although primitive in the extreme, excites in them the liveliest admiration. When I have rendered them any service they always want to recompense me with cocoa-nuts and bananas. One of them actually wanted me to cut his hair with my scissors, and, though by no means skilled in the part of Figaro, I yielded to the entreaties of this original savage, and flatter myself that I pleased him.

These people are most inquisitive; they want to see everything, and I am often obliged to keep them from coming into our tent; a little remonstrance is, however, sufficient to send them off very quickly. They look on while we are at our meals with great curiosity, but are unwilling to accept a share of anything we are eating. Nabao, one of my friends, and one of the chiefs of the island, tasted a little rice, after I had explained to him that it was only a vegetable product. They lay their hands readily enough on everything, even on our plates; but we have to be on our guard against this, for they continually use their fingers to hunt after certain small insects which live in their luxuriant hair. One of the natives wore a coronet made of cassowary feathers, and from time to time took it off to have a good hunt after these little parasites. What was our disgust to see him eat his victims!

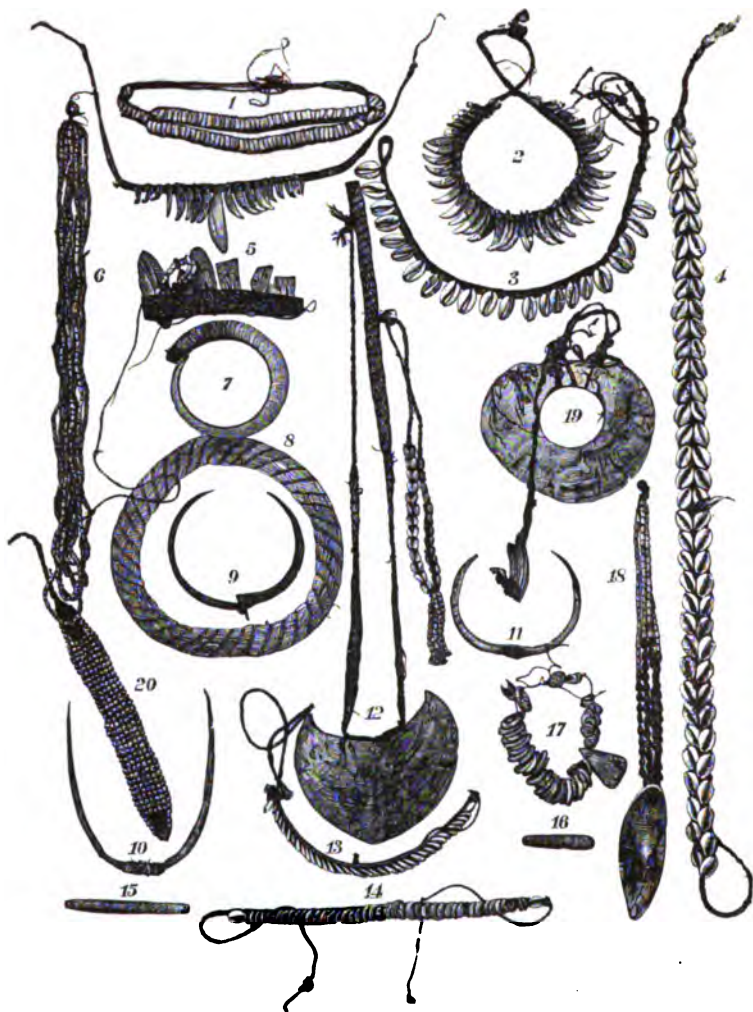
These coronets are really conducive to cleanliness, for the parasites lodge by preference in the cassowary feathers, which thus act as traps for them. I observed sores on the bodies of many of these natives; these sores were often very deep, and they also bore old scars, especially on their legs. I do not think I am wrong in regarding them as the results of caries of the leg bones. One man presented himself to me whose wrists and knees were hideously swollen, but it did not appear that his malady was painful. Several of the natives came to ask me for medicine for their wounds, which I doctored. Whether I was successful or not, I certainly acquired prestige and authority with them.

*March 23rd.*—While we were trying to make our house habitable, we received constant visits from the natives, and especially from the women and children. The women appear to be convinced that they have nothing to fear from me or my people, and they therefore come boldly. To-day they came both by sea and land, and conversed with us long and freely. Among them were two very tall old women, painted black all over. I asked the reason, and was told that this ornamentation signified grief for the loss of a relation, probably of a husband. These people, generally speaking, have very large ears, whose lobes they disfigure by a hole so large that a hen's egg of moderate size might be passed through it. This custom is common both to men and women.

Children were brought to see us, carried by their mothers in netted bags, resting on the backs of the mothers, suspended by a cord which passes round the woman's head. I was allowed to examine these children closely. They are generally pretty, their legs are small in proportion to their bodies; their hair is glossy and smooth, its colour is usually chestnut, but sometimes reddish.

I noticed that many children of from seven to ten years of age have smooth hair to a length of two or three inches, but beyond that it often, though not always, curls or becomes crisp. I saw one man whose long smooth hair of reddish chestnut colour hung below his shoulders. The hair on the body is always reddish. Nearly all the men and women have the cartilage of the nose perforated, and wear cylindrical shell orna-





1. *Coix lacryma Jobii* seeds headdress—Fly River.
2. Dogs'-teeth necklace—Fly River and Hall Sound.
- 3, 4. Shell necklace and belt—Moatta and Hall Sound.
5. Shell headdress—Fly River.
6. Sea's necklace—Fly River.
7. Pig's-tusk armband—Fly River.
8. Grass woven necklace—Hall Sound.

- 10, 11, 15, 16. *Zigan* or *punai*, used through the septum of the nose—all over New Guinea.
- 12, 13. Breastplates of mother-of-pearl—Moatta, Fly River, and Hall Sound.
14. Shell headdress—Hall Sound.
17. Shell armband used round the ankle—Hall Sound and Fly River.
18. Breast adornment—Fly River.
20. Seeds headdress.

ments, which they call *punai*—or cane, which they call *pauama*. The women wear necklaces of mother-of-pearl, which they call *mudri*, and which they prize highly. I have only seen such ornaments worn by old people and those who appear to possess a certain amount of authority, and I do not doubt they are a badge of distinction. The women often carry about (besides their children) dogs and little pigs, of which they seem to be very fond. They call their dogs *waia*, and their pigs *aiporo*. The former are like dingoes in colour and shape, but their hair is very close. They have not yet learned to bark, and perhaps are not capable of doing so. It is impossible to make friends with these stupid creatures, who, if one so much as looks at them, fly from the loving arms of their masters and hide themselves, growling in a peculiar and lugubrious strain until they are left alone. If I might give a name to this canine variety, I should call it *Canis tristissimus*.

Although it is not yet the dry season, we have had no rain for the last eight days except at night. The greatest heat registered was 92° Fahrenheit; the lowest at night 78°, and at mid-day 89°.

*March 24th.*—As if to contradict what I wrote yesterday, the rain began to come down in torrents at midnight. Our tent was flooded, and it was very fortunate that by working all night we were able to carry our baggage into the house, which is at last in a state to receive us, though not quite finished.

I have had an opportunity of testing the mettle



of my men. While the water was coming in, likely to spoil everything, especially the rice in the bags, they were so afraid of the cold and rain that I succeeded in making them work to save our property only by threatening them with a stout cudgel. I have ideas on the subject of humanity, of which I have brought a stock from Europe; but still I am persuaded that in certain cases the stick is more persuasive than the tongue, and, moreover, that it is the only language some people understand.

About 4 p.m. we were agreeably surprised by seeing a sail on the horizon, and some time after Captain Redlich entered the bay. Bad weather and contrary winds had compelled him to seek refuge here, and he also wanted to procure provisions, his own stock being exhausted.

*March 25th.*—Although I am prevented from making collections, on account of the incessant labour which the house demands, yet I am beginning to obtain some reptiles and insects from the natives, for which I have to pay exorbitantly in order to induce them to collect for me.

*March 26th.*—The men having finished the work about the house, I have paid them to cut down a number of trees in its rear, so as to form a field for my researches. In the trunks of some trees already prone on the ground, I found several good species. To-day, Tomasinelli, with Captain Redlich, went to the coast of New Guinea to shoot, but did not succeed in penetrating beyond the mangroves which thickly cover the coast.

Tambuabua, the oldest of my men, had an

attack of fever. Nearly all the natives, old and young, are troubled with cough.

*March 27th.*—At dawn we saw the missionaries' steamer coming into the bay. I went and met them, and piloted them to a safe anchorage. When I jumped on board I was shocked to find the deck strewn with people, all more or less ill with fever, caught at Port Moresby. Some of them were pitiable objects, from the state to which they were reduced. They were all natives—teachers and their families from the islands of Tonga and Lifu. Mr. Macfarlane was on board, and gave me some letters. Owing to the ship's being overladen, he had not been able to carry any of the stores he had led me to expect he would bring from Somerset.

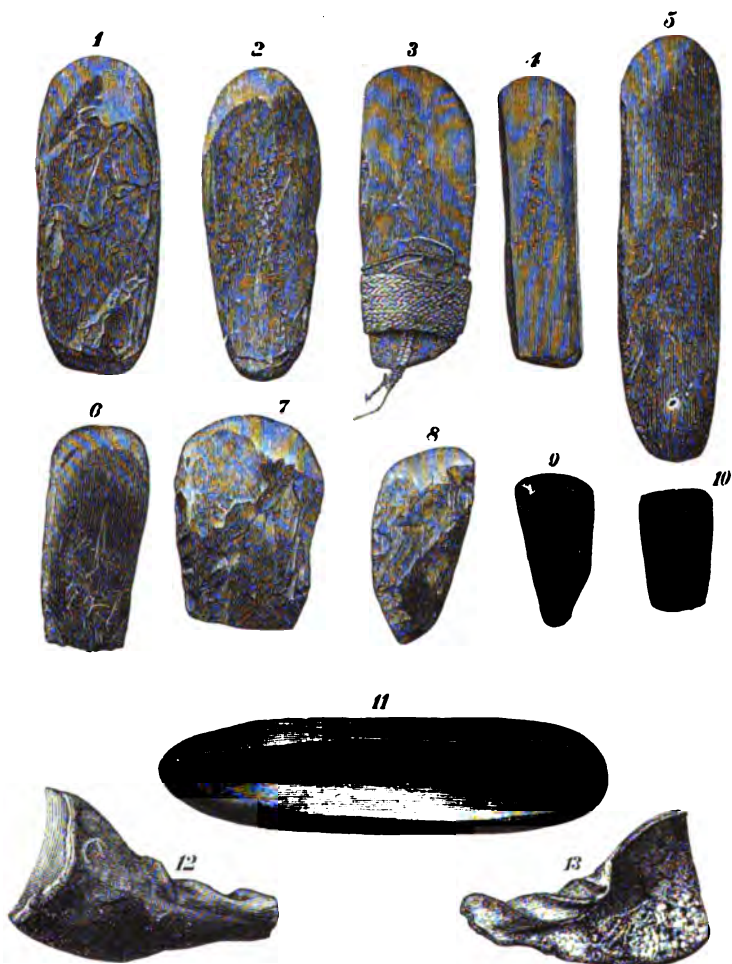
We dined on shore in our house, making merry over some bottles of Italian wine, which had stood the voyage very well. Returning on board the "Ellangowan," we found several natives, eager to sell cocoa-nuts, bananas, and curiosities of the country.

The wife of one of the teachers, who knows the language spoken at Port Moresby, succeeded in making herself partly understood by the natives, and was of service to me by acquainting them that it was my intention to visit the villages of the mainland, and, above all, to ascend the river which runs into the bay. The wife of one of the chiefs of Yule Island asked leave to come on board, preferring our ship to her own canoe, and remained conversing with the wife of the teacher, until, being frightened at some noise made by the machinery, she begged to be allowed to return to

land. Wishing a successful voyage to the "Ellangowan" and her crew, I went on shore, taking with me two native women and a man, who accompanied me to the house.

The Captain of the "Ida" obtained some supplies from the "Ellangowan," and I was therefore able to keep my own. I fear that if the steamer does not speedily return I shall be reduced to straits, for I reckoned on the chests left at Somerset in the middle of May.

*March 28th.*—We are again alone. Captain Redlich sailed this morning at break of day. In the wood behind the house I found in abundance a species of *megapodius*, which builds lofty mounds to receive its eggs. The natives, imitating the sound this bird utters, call it kepoko (*Megapodius Duperreyi*).



1—10. Stone axes used by the people of Hall Sound.  
 11. Grinding stone—Fly River.  
 12, 13. Shell spades—Moatta.



## CHAPTER III.

I cross the bay—The Eucalyptus—Birds and insects—A new species of Gowra—Aicci—I show the Natives a looking-glass—A visit—Friendly strangers—The influence of women—A Papuan house—Mourners—I win golden opinions by showing respect for the dead—A snake—Rope-making—Some splendid visitors—Nature's gentlemen—A great haul of insects—Oona—Nicura—An expedition is arranged.

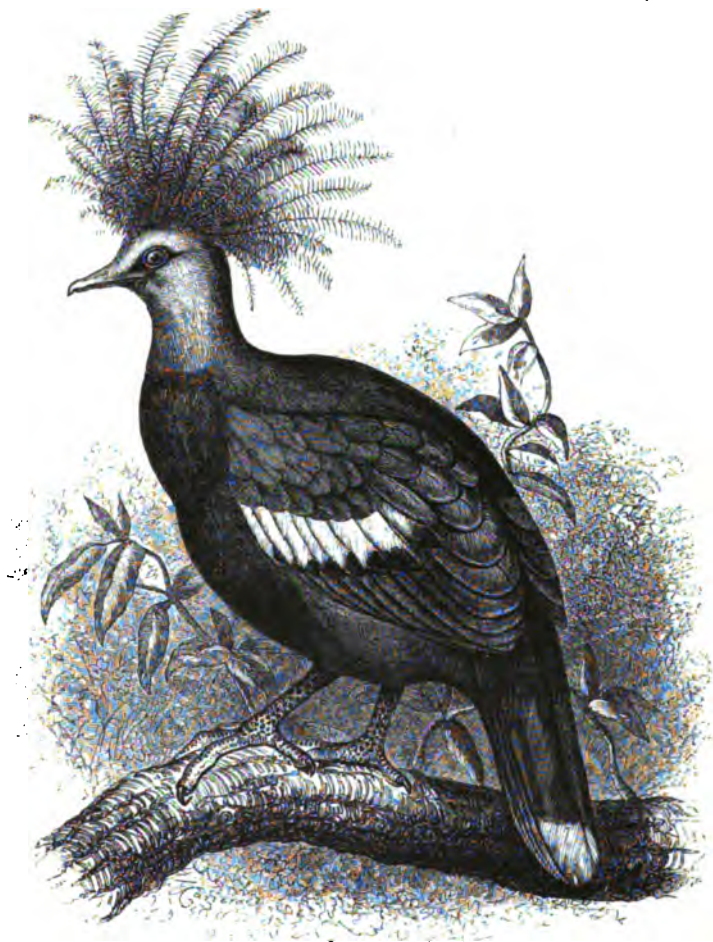
*March 29th.*—To-day for the first time I crossed the bay with Arnold and six of my men, steering to the north-west of the island. We made for the coast opposite to Yule Island, which is that of New Guinea. The coast lies low, and is formed of, or at least covered with, sand, and vegetation is scanty. We saw a grove of coconut palms, and some banana-trees, also a house and a dog, but not a single native. I waited an hour there thinking to see some one, but all in vain. Before re-embarking, I left a few little presents near the house for the invisible owners. I saw nothing worthy of mention, except the eucalyptus-tree, which I now can affirm to be indigenous to New Guinea. Aided by a fair wind, we coasted along towards the mouth of the river; but we soon found ourselves high and dry, and could only extricate ourselves at the cost of great fatigue. A bank of mud and sand prevented me from gaining my object. We tried other places,

but could not find a way to reach the river, probably because it was low tide. We then hugged the coast which stands to the east of Yule Island, but could not succeed in landing, owing to the dense growth of mangroves.

Seeing some canoes with natives on board, I approached them, and asked them either to go with me to the mouth of the river, or to point out a channel by which we might reach it. They seemed to consent, and I took them in tow. Hardly, however, had I set sail, when a boy seven or eight years old began to scream so loudly that the others, to quiet him, cut the rope by which they were secured to us, and refused to accompany us any farther. I came to a place where the water was muddy and fresh, but so low that we ran aground. We tried other places without success, and I was forced to give up the river for to-day. I saw two kangaroos running on the beach, one of which was very large. I also saw a buceros (hornbill), and several eucalyptus-trees.

*March 31st.*—At half-past 7 a.m. we sailed for the mainland, for thus I call New Guinea, proposing to explore the localities opposite us. We landed on a little beach covered with gravel and sand. We climbed a hill near the coast, for the purpose of viewing the surrounding country; but the vegetation was so rank and luxuriant that we could see nothing of it. Here and there in the valleys we found some tracts of land covered with high grass only. The soil is reddish, and seems rather arid. The hills, judging from the débris of coral and shells which we found up to the very summits, are of lime

formation; and it is evident, from the perfect condition of the fossil remains which we found,



*Goura Albertisii.*

that they were thrown up at a period comparatively recent.

In some places there are small groves of eucalyptus, but surrounded as they are by trees



more common to the country, they appear like strangers and intruders.

Birds and insects were rare. I succeeded, however, in shooting a fine hooded pigeon, which differed from any species hitherto known to me (*n. sp. Goura Albertisii*).

Among small birds I found some species I had already met with in the north-west of the island, and others which I had seen at Cape York.

Tomasinelli shot a small kangaroo, the male *Dorcopsis luctuosus*, of which in Europe the female only is known, and furnishes the type of the species. In this animal I observed two canine teeth, which do not exist in the female. Altogether I am not very well pleased with to-day's experience; the country appears poor, and I saw no bird which was new to me.

When we returned home we found fifteen natives waiting for us. They came near the house, and stayed there until evening. They are of a race strange to us, and appear timid and suspicious. They were of two shades of black, and wore the customary headcloth with a tail. I learnt from them that they call the kangaroo (*Dorcopsis*) "barai," the gowra (*Goura*) "turumaca," the white parrot "apena," also the *Eclectus polychlorus* "biru."

April 1st.—My collections increase, especially in reptiles and insects.

A native, named Aicci, to whom I promised some axes, knives, and a piece of red cloth, if he would guide me to the river, appeared to agree to my proposal. He pulled a stalk of grass and made eight knots in it, which marked the eight days he

would stay with me. On another stalk he made three knots, to indicate that he would be ready to go to the river in three days. A similar simple means of reckoning time exists among the people of Mount Arfak.

Some young people of both sexes came to see us; among them was a really pretty girl, not yet disfigured by tattooing. I showed them my looking-glass, which was large enough for them all to see their faces in it; and very comical it was to see them looking at themselves, almost frightened and astonished, making numerous grimaces, and laughing at themselves like mad people. The instinct of the woman came out clearly, and the girls quickly returned to look at themselves again, assuming by turns a winning smile, and a grave and serious countenance, and abstaining from making hideous grimaces as the men had done. I remarked that when these coquettish damsels arrived they had on garments made of grass stalks, which they call *nakibi*, a very simple dress; but immediately after they arrived they took from their maon longer and prettier robes, made of finer grass, and of brighter colours, varying from blood-red to tobacco. These are generally open at the side, and leave the thigh exposed. To-day I saw a native trying to catch a fish among the rocks, where it lay. He held out a crab over its hole, and to entice it left two other crabs on the rocks out of the water. The third crab he held in his hand, and out came the fish; the native tried to seize it with his other hand. Both, however, remained without their prey—that is, the fish without its crab, and the native without his fish.

Tambuabua had a fresh attack of fever, and I wanted to give him quinine; he would not, however, take it, but tried to cure himself in his own way, by rubbing himself with hot ashes. I hope his method will do him good, in spite of all the followers of Esculapius.

My companion and Arnold are attacked with fever.

*April 4th.*—More than fifty natives, who say they live on the slopes of Mount Yule, came to-day. Among the children they had with them, some were of light colour, approaching yellow, some had smooth hair, others frizzy hair. The hair of one adult might have been taken for that of an European. I saw some with chestnut-coloured, and one with almost grey eyes. I measured the heads; and if my measurements are correct, some are brachicephali and others dolicocephali.

Aicci came and told me that in a few days he would conduct me to a village called Nicura; he wanted to see the things I promised him some time ago, and appears to be disposed to keep his word—when at least it suits him to do so.

For some nights we have not been able to sleep, owing to mosquitoes and sand-flies. These small and almost microscopic insects are terrible enemies, and put us to real torture. My people, to defend themselves against their attacks, sleep in an open place, surrounded by great smoky fires.

*April 8th.*—This morning I went to the mainland. I found some canoes, with a number of natives who had passed the night there, having come to fish. I saw that they used square nets, like those of the fishermen on the Arno, and others

made with pockets here and there, to shut in the fish: these latter are of coarser manufacture. They are held upright in the water by means of light sticks, fixed to the upper corners of the nets, while heavy shells keep the ends down.

I bought from these natives some cooked fish; these they preserve by drying them, and stringing them on pieces of bamboo, which are used by both Malays and Papuans of the north-west for this purpose. When we parted they went to their houses, and I into the forest, where I shot several small birds, and among them a goat-sucker (*Ægotheles Bennettii* n. sp.), a species new to me, and other birds of more or less interest. I noticed that pigeons and parrots are scarce. Climbing one of the higher hills, I heard the note of a bird of paradise; and going in the direction whence it came, I saw a tree on which two birds were sitting, which I took to be the young, or the females, of the *Raggiana* bird of paradise. I stopped under the tree, in a place whence I could observe them well before shooting them. I was, however, detected by the birds, and they both flew off. One soon returned; and being curious to know what sort of creature I was, it came down, flew several times a few yards over my head, and then alighted on a creeper which had struck root in one of the branches of a tree, and, turning head over heels, stared at me head downwards, until I put an end to its life with a shot. I waited for its mate, but she did not come, and I returned home contented with my day's work.

This bird is the first of its species killed by an European. The two mutilated specimens I had

seen in 1873 at Orangerie Bay had been killed and mutilated by the natives. This creature is a clear proof of the existence of a species which some naturalists have denied.

*April 9th.*—I stayed at home to prepare the birds I shot yesterday, and killed some others in the island. To-day, as usual, a number of natives came, whom I speedily got rid of, being very busy. Later in the day, two men and three women came, who told me they lived in the mountains, near Mount Yule. I showed them what I was ready to give them if they would consent to take me with them, on which they seemed enchanted with the idea of earning so much. All seemed settled, but they called one of the women, and talked over the matter. She was of a true Malay type, with long, glossy, and very black hair, had great black eyes and a short, stout figure. She seemed to be a person in authority. My proposals were explained to her; she saw what I had offered, wondering, and expressing her admiration at everything by blowing vigorously between her closed teeth, and carrying her thumb to her teeth, then drawing it back, and exclaiming over and over again, "Ah! ah!"

Nevertheless, she put her veto on the bargain. The men tried to persuade her, but she worked herself up into a rage, and imposed silence, on which they at once went off. The men obeyed her like a couple of sheep. It is plain this is a country where woman exerts an open supremacy over man. It is true she works harder, but still is master; and it seems to me she knows well how to use her prerogative. This is not the first

occasion on which the men have been willing, but the women unwilling, and *vice versa*. Although it is a well-known fact throughout the world that women always get their own way, still I have never before been in a country where they have so much authority as in this !

The men who accompanied this particular woman were tall, slender, and healthy-looking ; the women were rather shorter, but well made. Two children, of about a year and a few months respectively, had light-coloured skins, and light chestnut-coloured hair. These five people are not prognathous, and have not retreating foreheads, but they have very round heads. They had with them certain dried roots, which they prize on account of a fragrant scent, which would be too strong for European nostrils.

My people find the task of seeking insects, if not laborious, at least disagreeable, and pass nearly the whole day in the forest sleeping and smoking, under the trees.

*April 11th.*—This morning, twenty natives, all armed with spears, came and made a disturbance in front of our house. Going to the window I asked what it all meant. Matciu seemed to be the leader of the people ; he differs much in type from most of the other men, and seems to me to prefer war to peace, for he is a turbulent individual. I tried to quiet them, and make them say what they wanted. At present I understand but little of their language, and speak still less ; but at last I made out that some of my men had gone into a plantation of banana-trees, and carried off some clusters of fruit. I made

Matciu understand, that though I loved peace, if he had spears I had guns ; but that if he preferred to explain matters by word of mouth rather than by violence, I would do likewise. Before hearing what he had to say, I laid down my gun, on their laying down their spears. I soon learned how matters stood, and seeing that the wrong was on the part of my men, I acknowledged to myself that I must pay for the bananas. I called my men, and having tried in vain to discover the thief, threatened to administer a lesson on their shoulders with the smallest of the banana stems ; the natives, however, generously interposed, and did not wish them to be punished. I then ordered the bananas to be paid for with some knives belonging to my men, and the natives were more than satisfied, and went away exclaiming that I was a just man !

*April 12th.*—It is 5 p.m., and I am seated in a Papuan house in the village of Nicura, where I arrived about half-past three, after having followed the course of the river—named the Ethel by Captain Moresby, and Nicura by the natives—for many miles.

The village is composed of a few wretched houses in the midst of grassy fields and plantations. The eucalyptus so abounds that I seem to be in Australia instead of New Guinea. The population is not more than seventy. My arrival, being that of the first white man, created great excitement, and there is much talk going on, about me and my possessions. Has my presence already made them forget a grave they have just filled up. When I arrived the whole population was

assembled in the space in the middle of the village, round a lifeless body. At my coming the chief advanced to me, and being acquainted with that custom, shook hands. He then told me that they were performing the funeral rites of a woman who died yesterday. I assumed an expression of concern, and asked to see the corpse. The chief, whose name is Oa, took me to the place where it lay. The mourners who stood around drew back to let me see. I took off my hat in token of respect, and made a small offering of beads to the dead. My conduct pleased the natives, and made them well disposed towards me for the time. The deceased woman lay on a mat, and food was placed near her. The bystanders, who seemed oppressed with grief, wept and shrieked, and struck their breasts and stomachs with their fists, as if they wanted to put an end to their own lives. At last the moment arrived when the body had to be consigned to its mother earth, in accordance with the great law—"Dust to dust, ashes to ashes." The mat was fastened up carefully, and then carried to a hole which had been dug under the house where the poor deceased had lived. At the time of her descent into her last dwelling, the howls and self-inflicted blows of the natives were redoubled. It was a strange scene!

Then came silence, after which a roar like thunder indicated that the first handful of earth which must for ever hide the corpse from human sight was being thrown.

This sad task was hardly over when the people dispersed. Several came forward to congratulate



me on my arrival, and many of them were presented to me by name. I made the acquaintance of Oa's wife, and also of his daughter, a girl apparently fifteen or sixteen years of age, of engaging manners and attractive person.

While reascending the course of the river to-day I saw some huge crocodiles, but few birds. I do not think there are many birds near the village, for there are few trees.

*April 13th.*—Last night a continual din hindered me from sleeping. Getting up at dawn, I made my way to the forest with five of the natives. I crossed some fields, partly covered with grass, and partly with plantations of yams and bananas. Trees were rare, and what there were were nearly all eucalypti. It seems to me that there are two different species of this tree—one with long narrow leaves, the other, nearer the river, with large leaves. The land we crossed was undulating. I saw no beautiful forest with lofty trees, as in the north-west of New Guinea.

My first shot this morning killed a kangaroo, and frightened my companion. While passing a small brook I shot two ducks (*Dendrocygna guttata*), and with my third shot I brought down a fine hawk, which was standing on a trunk of a tree devouring the flesh of a small kangaroo.<sup>1</sup> I had gone to the forest because the natives had promised to take me where I should find

<sup>1</sup> This splendid bird, a specimen of which I had obtained at Andai in 1872, belongs to a newly-discovered genus, namely, the *Harpyopsis*, and is approximate to a genus which is found in South America. It is called by Salvadori *Harpyopsis nova-guineæ*.



HARPIOPSIS NOVE-GUINEE, SALVADORI.

Vol. I., p. 278.



Raggi's bird of paradise, and I therefore could not properly appreciate its beauty or its rarity; but went on continually asking the natives why the birds of paradise did not appear.

We travelled for several hours in the forest without hearing the notes of a single bird, and it seems as if the little good luck I had had this morning had deserted me.

The natives seemed less well disposed towards me, because they saw, that if we returned without a bird of paradise, they would not gain what I had promised them. At last they had recourse to incantation. Oa and two others halted, and ordered the others to do the same. The three then formed as it were a triangle, each one looking at the others, broke off some small boughs, and began to make signs, and utter words of magic, calling several animals by name, and among them birds of paradise. Having repeated the signs and exorcisms several times, they threw away the branches, and resumed the march.

By a strange coincidence ten minutes had not elapsed before we came to a tree on which were some birds of paradise. I saw three full-grown males, and killed the two finest.

I will not stop to describe my joy at that moment; only naturalists who have been similarly situated could understand it, and they can imagine it without my telling them.

I might describe the habits of the bird, its beauty, and the great difference between the birds lately or just killed, and the skins of those which have been killed some time; but as I cannot expect that all my readers are naturalists, and

therefore likely to feel interested in such small details, I had better omit them.

In the meantime, while I was waiting in silence to get a shot at the third bird, the natives discovered a large snake under the remains of an old tree which was lying on the ground. They instantly fled, and halted only when at a distance of about fifty yards. They cried out something to me which I could not understand. I did not know what to think, and I remained behind, alone, looking all around me, above and below, to see whether any danger threatened. At last I went to the natives, and tried to ascertain the cause of their strange conduct, and they made me understand why they had fled, and I returned to see the snake myself, which in fact I did, although two thirds of its length were hidden in a hole in the earth. His size was such that I concluded he could not be poisonous, and I at once grasped him by the tail. While dragging him out of his lair with my two hands, I was prepared to flatten his neck, close to his head, with one foot the moment he emerged, so that he should not have the power of turning or moving.

My plan succeeded perfectly, and while the snake's head was imprisoned under my foot I grasped his body with my hands, and, as though I had vanquished a terrible monster, turned towards the natives with an air of triumph. They, struck with terror, had looked on at the scene from a safe distance. I must confess that the snake offered but little resistance, although it writhed and twisted itself round my arm, squeezing it so tightly as to stop the circulation, and

make my hand black. I remained, however in possession of its neck, and soon secured it firmly to a long thick stick which I had brought with me. I then gave the reptile to my men to carry home. The snake is of the Python tribe, but I am unacquainted with its species, which is, I should say, unknown. The colour of its back is blue, with many shades and coppery reflexions. Its belly is pale yellow. Thinking I had had a good day's sport, I did not offer any opposition to the natives when they wished to return homewards between twelve and one o'clock. As we went along we passed by some swamps, where, for the first time in New Guinea, I saw the *Porphyrius* and the *Lobivanellus*. In addition to these semi-aquatic birds, I saw many other kinds and species which I had met with in Australia; so that it seems reasonable to conclude that where the country is of the nature of Australia the birds are Australian, and where the lovely forest of Papua exists the birds are Papuan.

Soon after we arrived at the village, Aicci wanted to return to Roro, the native name for Yule Island. I did not wish to oppose him; and having paid my guides to the forest in such a manner as to make them anxious for my return, and made numerous presents to the women, I went to the river, accompanied by half the population of Nicura, and embarked. Many were the adieux, loud the shouts! They begged me repeatedly to come and see them again.

The houses of these natives are of most simple construction; they consist of a light wooden framework, the bottom being somewhat raised above

the ground, the sides composed of the boughs of the nipa, and covered with palm leaves, which they call "piri." They can be easily set down, taken up, and carried; so it is not difficult for the natives to improvise a village, wherever they may be. The women live in houses apart, near those of their male relations. They usually sleep in hammocks, which they make very well, and under which fires are alight all night, to keep off the cold and damp, and those pests, the musquitoes and sand-flies.

I saw some men hard at work, making rope and string for their nets out of strong grass. They fasten a cord to a pole, and keep it taut with one hand, while with the other they pass over it a string wound round a small stick, at the same time giving it a rotatory motion.

The ropes made in this way turn out strong and serviceable. I did not see that these natives had any weapons except their spears, which are long and very straight sticks, sharpened to a point. They live chiefly on the products of the soil, and on fish, which abounds in the river. The kangaroo supplies them with flesh, and they also eat the large crabs and abundant shell-fish.

Among the plants cultivated by them I observed the bread fruit (*Artocarpus*), for which the native name is "hoki." I saw no signs of idol worship; nor, during the funeral ceremonies at which I was present, of the existence of any religious idea beyond that of mourning; and that too, I may add, is not very deep, judging from the manner in which the manifestation of it came to an end after the sepulture of the woman whom the

natives were burying when I arrived. At night there was grief and lamentation, as is customary in other parts of New Guinea. At sunrise also a few lamentations were heard, but they soon ceased. During the day I saw that some of the relations of the deceased had lighted a fire on the grave, and were eating and chattering by its side. I saw some old people with grey hair, and one white-headed man.

Some of the natives whom I measured were five feet nine inches in height, but as a rule they are not so tall, and the women are much shorter. They use rude vessels of terra-cotta for cooking their food. They seem very timid, and would run away every time they thought I was going to fire my gun, and then stop, huddled all together, holding their ears so that they might not hear the report.

They keep numbers of dogs and pigs; the latter are taken in the forest, and tamed; but I did not see any domestic animals.

I saw a poor white cockatoo, almost bereft of plumage, which was maltreated by every one, and driven away from the houses. When I asked about it, I was told that they kept it in order to have feathers to adorn themselves. In short, the unfortunate bird lives to be plucked.

This evening, when I arrived at Yule Island, I found my companion, with John and Arnold, had barricaded the house by way of precaution.

*April 14th.* I did not leave the house to-day, being kept at home by a sore foot. I employed myself in curing the skins of the birds killed yesterday.



Some natives who, I was told, live a long way off on the coast, came to see us. Two of them, from their manners and ornaments, seemed to be persons of importance, or chiefs. Their arms were almost hidden by bracelets of white shells; in their ears they wore at least fifty tortoise-shell rings, each about two inches in diameter, the whole being connected by a double string of very small white teeth.

On their necks they wore three rows of brilliantly white crocodile teeth. A coronet, very like the necklace, bound the hair on the top of the head, whence it escaped in a mass, and was gathered together again by what was almost a second coronet made of cassowary feathers. On the forehead they wore three discs of shell, white as snow, with a perforated piece of tortoiseshell, finely worked, placed above. A large shell at the wrist, and a piece of mother-of-pearl on the breast, completed their ornamentation. They were justly proud of their fine appearance.

At first these natives seemed somewhat timid; but I soon set them at their ease, and they laughed heartily. There was a certain nobility about them, and they did not debase themselves by begging, or seem to covet anything I showed them. No, these two men are something more than savages; in the European sense of the word they are both gentlemen. One of the women was very pretty, and seemed much more intelligent than the men. She was full of vivacity and merriment, and always wanted to talk with me, jesting and laughing at the mimic art we had recourse to, to make ourselves understood. Two of the

men and one of the women were streaked with black, which, I was told, was, as usual, a symbol of mourning. These natives differ from those who are now more familiar to me, in having very aquiline noses, very narrow foreheads, very fully developed orbits as well as cheekbones, and faces which narrow in a remarkable way down to the chin.

They came unarmed, and were very much astonished when I showed them the snake I brought from Nicura yesterday, alive in a box; they all, however, ran off when I took it by the neck, and allowed it to twist itself round my legs. I succeeded in getting them to return; and when they saw me kiss the head of the lovely creature, they gave a howl of amazement and admiration. They seem to have a great dread of snakes; and though they eat them when they have killed them, they do not like touching them when alive.

The specimen I have is thirteen feet long and three inches in diameter. It appears to be very gentle, and does not snap at me when I touch and caress it.

Many of the natives here, seeing how much I gave to Aicci for having accompanied me to Nicura, offer to take me to more remote villages. I am determined to go the mountains, and have commenced my preparations for an absence of ten days.

*April 16th.*—It is a month to-day since we arrived in this island. Our relations with the natives have hitherto been most excellent. They have no complaint to make of us, and I have no-

thing to reproach them with except their laziness, which hinders them from collecting insects and animals for me. We have had no quarrelling or ill-humour; and the cloud which seemed to arise to mar the good understanding between us, owing to the theft of the bananas, was soon dispersed.

I may say the climate is good, although more than two-thirds of our people have had attacks of fever. The fever does not seem to be of a malignant character, for it yields at once to moderate doses of quinine. So far as I can learn, the natives consider this a bad year, and something like influenza is prevalent. I notice that many of the natives have a cough, which appears to be epidemic; all my people have suffered from it, the women most.

I am not well pleased with my collections, especially of birds; and although I have already found some new and interesting species, the country does not appear to be very rich in them. Insects and reptiles abound, however; *longicorns*, *buprestis*, *tenebrionids*, and *curculionids*, cluster on the trees I have had felled near the house. I have also obtained from the natives some fine *batocera*, among which one is very large, and its elitra are all covered with a white dust; I believe it to be a new species. Being on good terms with the natives, I have found out how to reach the interior by way of the river, and have therefore good reason to feel hopeful for the future.

I measured some of the natives to-day; the tallest man was five feet, nine inches and a half,

and the tallest woman five feet three inches and a half; the shortest man, five feet four inches and a half, and the shortest woman five feet.

The mean temperature may be set down at 78° at 6 a.m., 86° at 3 p.m., and 80° at 9 p.m. Rain is scarce; the sky is generally clear, with banks of clouds on the horizon. The barometer varies but slightly. Moderate breezes from the south-east freshen in the afternoon, and almost die away in the early hours of morning.

*April 17th.*—This morning, when I was about to embark on a shooting expedition, some native men and women came in a canoe. I at once recognized Oa, my host at Nicura, who told me that he had come to see his friends in Roro (Yule Island). When he heard from me that I meant to go to his village to-morrow, he told me to put off my departure until his return, when he would go with me to a village in the mountains. Although I have not much faith in the promises of the natives, I agreed to wait for him.

None of the natives of Roro came to see us, except Nabao, who is the most agreeable of them all. He excused himself for not having come to see us for so long, by telling us that he had been away. He brought two iron axes, that I might sharpen them on the stone for him.

He is always good-humoured and respectful, and never importunate; and it cannot be denied that the chiefs of these people are well brought up. He accepted some biscuit and a cup of tisane of violets, an excellent substitute for tea, which keeps me awake.

To-day, the scene of a few days ago was re-

peated. Natives, armed with spears, came and complained that some of my men had again been stealing bananas. The head man, who carried eight or ten spears, advanced as if to strike me. I pointed out to him, that although I had not my gun with me, I had my revolver handy ; and this somewhat quieted them.

I then called my men, and putting them in a row, told the native who had been robbed to look for the thief, and to punish him in any way he liked. I made him understand, that from my house it was not possible for me to look after his bananas, and that I did not intend to be responsible for them ; and moreover, that I did not mean to compensate him for the loss, as I had done before ; that he must look after his own property ; and that so far as I was concerned, he would not have been blamed if he had killed one of my men, had he been taken *in flagrante delicto*. The chief on this turned his wrath on the head of the thief, and threatened to run his spear through him, but subsequently contented himself by stripping the rags he wore off his back. I am much displeased with the bad conduct of my men, but I am almost unable to prevent it, as I cannot always be present with them during their peregrinations in the island. It is most vexatious that the harmony which exists between myself and the natives should be endangered ; and it would indeed grieve me if one day I have to make a severe example for the common good.

*April 19th.*—Oa and a relation of his, Aicci by name (not my friend of Roro), came this morn-

ing to take me with them to the mountains. Unfortunately Tomasinelli had gone to shoot on the mainland, and as he had the boat with him I was forced to put off our departure until to-morrow.

While Oa was near the house, he gave me an opportunity of observing a circumstance which I think worth narrating. As he was sitting under the window, all by himself, and, as he thought, unobserved by me, he took a pebble, attached to a string, out of a case made of bamboo. Holding the end of the string between the thumb and forefinger, and keeping his hand steady, he uttered certain requests to the stone, which moved about in his hand in various ways, and thus seemed to reply to his questions. I cannot tell whether or not he was contented with the replies he received; at any rate, he repeated the experiment very often.

This kind of superstition is not new to me. I have seen the same thing done in Italy.

*April 20th.*—Day had hardly dawned, when Oa, Aicci, and Ocona came, ready to set forth for Nicura. Ocona is an intimate friend of mine, and comes from the mountains. He is a younger brother of Naimi, and is mis-shapen and deformed by nature. The joints of his hands and feet are especially disfigured by horrible swellings, and he has other physical defects; but all are atoned for by his gentle disposition, and I am drawn to him as much by compassion as by his fine qualities.

This morning there was a dead calm, and we were forced to row, as there was not enough wind to fill the sails.

We set off at 7 a.m. We did not enter the

Nicura river by the same mouth as the first time we ascended its course, but by another one, which Oa pointed out to us, farther to the east. We passed by the little mouth of a tributary river, which the natives call Bioto, and which I take to be the river Hilda of Moresby. Its waters mingle so smoothly with those of the Nicura, that its existence might readily be overlooked if one were not looking out carefully for it. We also passed another mouth, which I was told is that of a second small river which rises in the slopes of Mount Yule. At length, at half-past 12 a.m., we arrived at the pier of Nicura. I asked for some men to carry my baggage ashore, and take it to the village; this was done without delay. On arriving at the village I was enthusiastically received.

I passed the remainder of the day, in watching the boys practising the use of the spear. One of them ran as hard as he could, trailing a cocoa-nut attached to a cord behind him. A troop of boys followed him, and tried to hit the cocoa-nut with little spears.

A paling has been erected round the house where the woman whose funeral I witnessed is buried. Her relations continue to eat over her grave. It appears that their sorrow for the loss of the woman is more sincere than it seemed at first. It has been arranged that we are to go to a village in the mountains, called Epa, to-morrow, and, in addition to my own people, some of the natives of Nicura will form part of my escort, and carry my baggage. My own men are five in number, counting Arnold.







## CHAPTER IV.

The women join our party, and make difficulties for me—A village interior—A tame snake—Pretended sorcery, and real fight—Aira—A painful operation—Curious belts worn by the Natives—Successful quest in the forest—Domestic animals—A fresh start—A sleepless night—A beautiful scene—Perfumed air.

*April 21st.*—It appeared as we were about to depart, that besides the men, a number of women were going with me. I did not care much for their company, for women are always an impediment; but I must put up with them, as it is the custom here for the women to accompany their husbands, and to carry the provisions.

We left the village at 8 a.m., taking an easterly direction. At first we crossed some low hills, covered with thick grass and eucalyptus-trees. From time to time a quail arose, and a startled kangaroo fled before us; but on the whole animal life was scarce.

We crossed some rivulets — swelled by the rain of the last few days — over rude bridges made of trunks of trees, which are easy enough for those who are accustomed to them, but expose those who are not to the risk of an involuntary bath. We had then to climb other hills, shaded only by a few eucalyptus-trees, so

that the heat of the sun was almost insupportable. As, however, we were pursuing a well-beaten track, we were able to get along at a good pace. It was very pleasant to find beautiful tracts of forest here and there, and to rest for a while under the shade of venerable trees.

We gained in elevation hill after hill, and from time to time caught glimpses of the distant low-lying country, covered for the most part with thick grass.

I neither saw nor heard any bird that interested me as we went along; but when, two or three times, I was on the point of firing my gun, my companions stopped me, crying, "Mia, mia! babini mariki" (No, no; the women are afraid). How many things have not the natives prevented my doing with these terrible words, "The women are afraid!" At the sight of a fine owl I could not resist the temptation of firing, even at the risk of incurring the ire of my gentle companions. I fired, the owl fell, but the women yelled in terror at the report, and the men reproached me with my disregard of their fears. I was pleased at having brought down a bird which was new to me (*Ninox assimilis*, n. sp.).

At half-past 3 p.m., having attained an elevation of nearly 1200 feet above the level of the sea, we arrived near a village half-way on our journey, and were obliged to halt, in order to send messengers to announce our arrival to the people of the village—this, it appears, is the custom—so we sent on two of our men. They returned a quarter of an hour later, and told us that they had been made wel-

come. But it was not yet time for us to go; the women had to precede us in token of peace, and to present the head men of the village with an offering of fish and cocoa-nuts. Half-an-hour later I heard a whistle, which was answered by some of our people. This was a sign for us to move towards the village. We started off, and in five minutes we reached a village on the summit of a hill, surrounded by a strong double stockade from ten to twelve feet high, which gives it the appearance of a little fort. Passing the stockade, I found myself in an open place surrounded by eleven houses, placed in rows of three in front, a larger house of different construction from the rest, with two others on one side, and one standing by itself faced two others on the opposite side.

In the centre of the open space there was a small low building, in which I could see the astonished faces of women and children, who stood looking at us. But it contained something more than this, for I was told afterwards that the corpses of a man and a woman, who had been dead for three days, were lying there. The horrible stench that issued from it had made me suspect something of the kind, so that I had no difficulty in believing what my guides told me.

In the village there were not more than six or eight young men, and about fifteen women, not one of whom had ever seen a white man before; they were therefore considerably frightened at sight of me. The leaders, however, came forward, and acting on the advice of Oa, shook hands with me; but they trembled like leaves,

their fear being quite legible in the pallid hue which overspread their dark faces. The presence of the two corpses, and the colour of the faces of the living, made me suspect the existence of some pestilence. After the presentation of the men, the women in great terror went through the same ceremonies of introduction; but by means of some small presents I managed to overcome the repugnance of the natives, and in a short time I made friends with all, and especially the women.

The largest house was placed at my disposal, and in a short time I was comfortably installed in it.

Some of the natives went to the house with me but the others refused; and when I asked the reason, it was explained to me that those who were in mourning could not enter the house of reception, which they called "Marea."

Mourning varies according to the degree of relationship to the deceased, and the degrees are marked in a singular manner, by painting the face more or less black. I saw one native who had not only his face, but his whole body blackened. I was told he was the son of the deceased persons, who were man and wife. He was not only painted black, but was also especially adorned. On his head he wore a tupuna, a kind of cloth made of bark, pounded and beaten until it is soft, like coarse cloth. A large coronet of cassowary feathers encircled his head, covering his neck and great part of his face. On his neck he wore a necklace of the feathers of various birds, all of a dark colour. At





DORCOPSIS LUCTUOSA.

his sides hung three or four empty nuts, which seemed to be intended to jingle like bells; on his legs below the knee, and on his ancles, he wore ornaments made of the finest grass of a yellowish red colour. He was a curious object; but I observed a certain taste and art in this strange costume.

At dusk several other men and women arrived in the village, on their return from hunting the kangaroo or barai (*Dorcopsis luctuosus*), of which they had killed twenty. They use long nets in hunting this animal, with which they surround its haunts, and when it is entangled in the nets they kill it with clubs.

The chief of the village was presented to me. He is a fine, well-built man, of lofty stature, with an imposing and almost noble mien; his name is Aira; his house is the third from mine.

We tried to communicate with one another by signs, and our conversation was prolonged until late in the night.

My inkstand, pen, and diary in which I began to write these notes, excited much surprise, and I was requested to conceal them. Oa, however, explained, that there was no evil in any of these things, so I was allowed to go on writing.

*April 22nd.*—At half-past 7 a.m., accompanied by some of the natives of Epa and some of those of Nicura, I left the village, to shoot in the surrounding forest, which, towards the north-east, is most beautiful and luxuriant, and may be called a real Papuan forest. We descended into a wet and muddy valley, where the timber was truly superb.

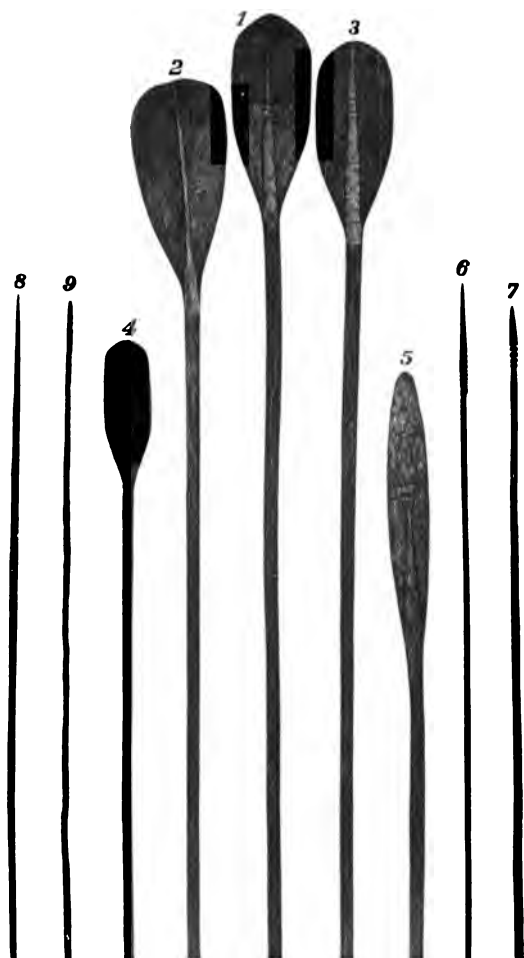


The first bird I saw was *Cicinnurus regius*, the so-called king of the birds of paradise, which is common enough, but still one of the most lovely of the feathery tribe. Soon after I heard the note of the *Raggiana*, and I soon shot some young cocks and hens of that beautiful and interesting species. The *Tanysiptera galatea*, or kingfisher, with its long tail, was abundant, and I shot some fine specimens. At mid-day I was forced to return, because the natives complained of hunger.

I was by no means pleased with my day's work, which would have had better results had I been alone. The natives, and especially those of Epa, had such a horror of the report of the gun that whenever I fired they ran away, and made me lose many good opportunities.

*April 23rd.*—This morning as I was getting ready to go out shooting, Oa came, and told me that he and his people wanted to leave for Nicura. I was much surprised at this, because he had agreed I should remain at Epa for five days, and I naturally refused to accede to his extraordinary request. However, the Nicura people insisted upon going, and it is unnecessary to say that the women were more urgent than the men. I then studied the faces of the Epa people, to see whether my presence was distasteful or not to them. As it appeared that they did not object to me, but were, on the contrary, very sorry to see me on the eve of departure, I absolutely refused to pay any attention to what Oa and his people said; and feeling quite safe on the subject, I ordered Arnold and three of the men to go and shoot. He had, however, hardly left the village, when he was





1—5. Paddles—Fly River and Yule Island.  
6—9. Spears—Yule Island and Hall Sound.

stopped by the women of Nicura, and I was compelled to interfere, to make them quit their hold, and allow him to proceed. It appeared, however, that the worst was yet to come. I offered to pay all the Nicura men who had come with me, and to let them go, protesting that neither I nor my men would start before the appointed time, and this some of the men and women agreed to, after which they went away. Arnold did not return until four o'clock, and brought but little spoil.

I remained at home, and obtained a good many insects and reptiles from the women of Epa, whom I had to pay well to induce them to collect for me. This did not please the Nicura people who remained; I imagine that they were jealous of what was given to those of Epa, although they had tried their best to prevent my having anything left wherewith to pay anybody.

Several times during the day Oa and his friend Aicci disturbed me with their quarrels, to which I paid little attention; until, thinking perhaps to frighten me, they began to sharpen the points of their spears, and then I changed the cartridges of my revolver and gun. Towards evening they again began to make a disturbance, and soon worked themselves up into a state of excitement against me. Aicci, to insult me, made an insolent gesture with both hands, like one described by Dante in the "Inferno." I said nothing, and pretended not to have understood it, although I determined to administer a lesson to the impudent fellow.

In the meantime some unusual occurrence had

taken place outside, and one of my men summoned me in haste to Aira's house. I ran, and found the latter, spear in hand, near the stockade behind his house. A huge serpent was trailing itself slowly along the stockade, while Aira was making signs at him. The serpent was looking at him, and from time to time thrusting out his head towards him. My men, who did not know that the snake was tame, tried to kill him before I could prevent them, but fortunately the reptile made its escape. Aira was fuming with rage, and began to vent his wrath by thrusting with his spear at an old cocoa-nut which was lying near his feet. At that moment he looked like a terrible and wrathful sorcerer; but I believe little in such sorcery, and know how to exorcise it. Oa, Aicci, Ocona, and the others, were, however, quite dismayed by his wrath, and came to me with threatening gestures and words, insisting that we should depart at once, and camp in the forest. Aira was then evidently a magician; and I determined to become one too, in order to bring him, and all the rest of them, to a sense of their duty.

When night fell, the most profound darkness reigned in the village, unbroken save by the glimmer of a little live charcoal in my house. Aira, still continuing to thrust his spear into the cocoa-nut, had retired to the door of his house, and the Nicura men had betaken themselves into a corner, and were plotting something.

My time for action had now come, and taking a large handful of gunpowder, I strewed it on the ground in the middle of the house. Arnold, who was in my confidence, applied fire to it

without any one perceiving what he did. The bright flash and the suffocating smoke which spread through the house, with the peculiar smell of the powder, all combined to produce an immense effect.

Oa, Aicci, and the rest, were terrified, and crying like children, begged me not to kill them.

I told them they had nothing to fear from me if they treated me with respect, but if they repeated their annoyance and insults I most certainly should be revenged. It will hardly be believed, that immediately after the explosion of the powder a violent storm, with lightning and terrific thunder set in; and I greeted every clap of thunder with studied smiles, while the terror of the poor creatures increased with each, as they were fully persuaded that I had invoked the storm.

When tranquillity appeared to be restored, I went to Aira's house, told him my men were not aware the serpent belonged to him, and presented him with some knives and an axe. I thus calmed his ire, which had already much subsided. Now all is still, but I do not think it prudent to sleep without my revolver by my side.

*April 24th.*—The terror which my Nicura companions felt last night had subsided with sleep, and again this morning they wanted to talk about returning. I refused to listen to them, and told Aira that if he and his people did not put any difficulty in my way, I meant to stay in their village as long as my provisions lasted, that is, three days. I not only promised him in particular a number of little things which

I knew he would find useful, and the other chief men of the village a number of other things, but I let him see how much I had still left to give in exchange for insects and animals.

Aira gladly accepted my offer, and all the people, but especially the women, gave a loud shout! Then turning to the Nicura people, I gave them to understand in an unmistakable manner that I would not go for three days, but that they were quite at liberty to depart; on which all but one went away.

To show that I really meant to be friends with Aira and his people, I embraced and kissed him in the open place in the village, and afterwards, amidst general laughter, I proceeded to kiss all the women. The scene was certainly a very comical one; some of the most timid wanted to repel my embrace, but were urged by the others to submit. Although it was incumbent on me, in order to prove my impartiality, and to give a ceremonial appearance to the performance, to kiss all the old and ugly women, in reality I kissed the youngest and prettiest only.

The men also wished to seal their friendship by a kiss, but I explained to them that only the chief and the women had a right to this observance.

Arnold then went to shoot with the other men, while I remained at home to receive the animals which the natives brought me. During the day only some young women remained in the village, one of whom, being unwilling to leave me alone, had the politeness to remain with me all day.

Although we could not make one another un-

derstand by words, still we passed an agreeable day, talking in signs, laughing, and joking. She was one of the youngest and prettiest girls in the village; she had much of the Malay about her; she had great black eyes; her figure was round and plump.

The natives brought me some reptiles, and among them the *Acantophis*, a poisonous snake, and a number of fine insects. Arnold only shot a few young cock birds of the *Paradisea raggiana*, and a few common birds.

*April 25th.*—Oa, who had been left alone by the departure of all his comrades yesterday, was quiet enough to-day, and gave me no trouble, though he refused to go out shooting with me.

I shot a fine male bird of paradise, and some other birds, among them a small parrot of a species hitherto apparently unknown, and certainly one of the most beautiful of its kind (*Cyclopsittacus cervicalis*, *n. sp.*).

One of the insects I found, being new to me and perhaps to entomologists, merits especial mention. It is a *longicornus* of the genus *Sphingnotus*, resembles *S. mirabilis* in the pointedness of the upper wings, which have white spots on them, and certainly surpasses it in beauty (*Sphingnotus Albertisii*, *n. sp.*).

While in the village I had an opportunity of observing how the natives remove all the hair from their bodies. They seem to have a perfect horror of hair, and to get rid of it will undergo torture. The process of removing the hair, including the beard, requires an operator. The patient lies extended on the floor, where he



remains motionless, while the operator, holding between his thumb and forefinger a small piece of wood, with two threads made of tough grass fastened to it, runs it over the skin of the patient, and giving it a circular motion, twists it round the hairs, and pulls them out. Aira lay on the floor to-day for about three hours, undergoing this operation; he had on a belt of coloured grass, fine but strong.

The people here, even more universally than on the coast, wear belts of this description, six or seven inches wide, and so tight as to give a peculiar appearance to the body. They are sometimes woven on the body, and cannot then be taken off; and are smooth, made of bark, but so hard, that it is difficult to understand how these people can wear them against the skin. They regard them as ornaments, and wear them as tight as possible, so much so, that they almost impede the free action of the body. The young men especially are rarely seen without them. The women wear the nakibi, and the men cover themselves with a piece of tupuna. Here, as at Roro, the men wear the tupuna very tight.

Towards 4 p.m. I saw the women assembling in the middle of the village, each one of them carrying a roasted barai (kangaroo), which she placed on the ground with leaves and bits of bark. The men then began to carve and divide the poor animals, cooked in their skins, which had been more or less removed by the fire.

When the division had been made, the shares were sent to the different houses. Other eatables

## *An Orator.*

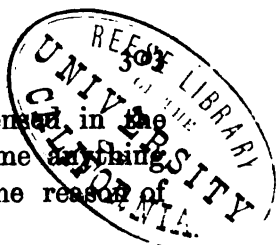
were then brought, which were dispensed in the same way. As this was the first time anything of the kind had happened, I asked the reason of it, but could not find out.

As at Nicura, public discussion is in vogue here. An orator, standing in his verandah, holds forth in a loud tone of voice, and without interruption for half-an-hour at a spell. When he makes a sign that he has finished, some other speaker undertakes the task of replying to him. When ideas, as it appeared to me, were wanting, or his memory proved treacherous, the bystanders suggested to him, in a low tone, how to proceed, on which he continued his oration.

To-day I saw a young tame cassowary standing outside the stockade, and was told it belonged to Aira. I asked them to make it come back into the village, in order that I might get a good look at it; but this they refused to do.

I was going down to look at the bird, but was prevented. The stupidity of the cassowary is remarkable. When it walks round the village, it obstinately endeavours to get through the interstices of the stockade, always trying those through which it cannot pass, while a few paces beyond it would find an open door.

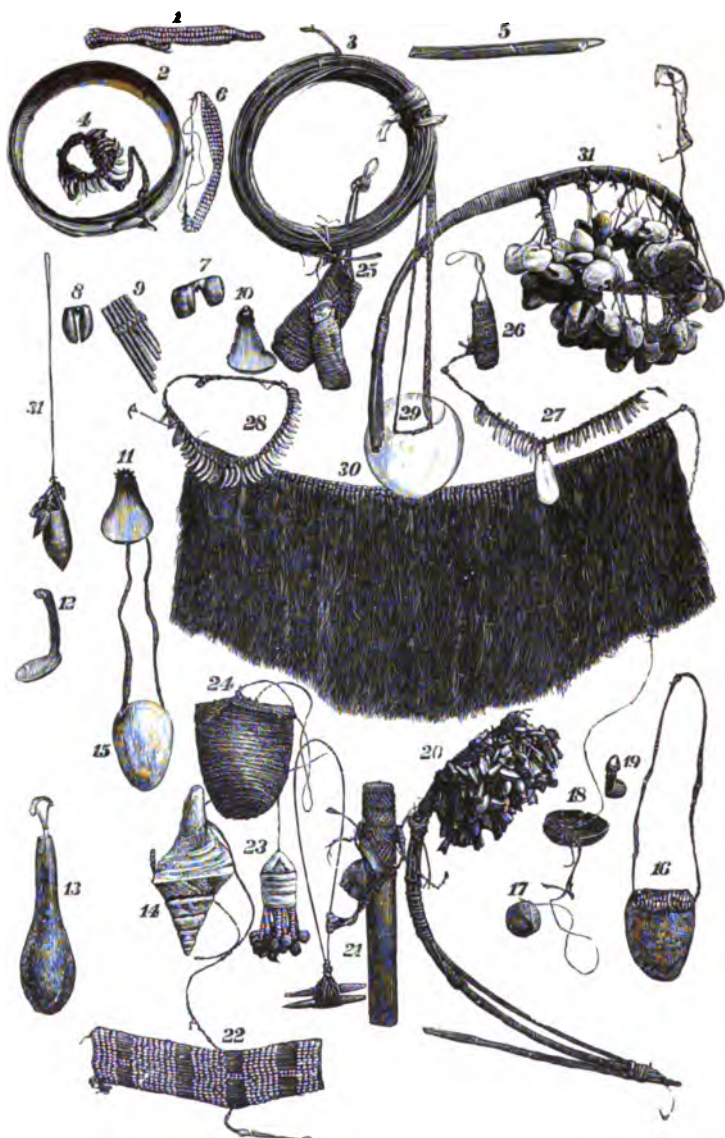
Large fat pigs abound in the village. These animals are generally caught in the forest when young, and tamed. They afterwards enjoy the fullest freedom, and, leaving the village by day, go into the forest, from which they do not return until evening. The young pigs are kept by the women in their houses, and treated by them with great kindness. There are also eight



or ten dogs in every house. I never saw such wretched famished animals. The poor beasts must be good gymnasts, for in order to enter the houses, they have to climb the trunk of a very smooth, tree, which serves the natives as a staircase. The women are occasionally impatient with the poor creatures, and then they are seized by the neck or tail, and hurled out of the house without pity, and it is a wonder to me that they do not break their necks or legs ! Probably they have learned the art of falling, for they do not appear to mind it, and often fall from a height of ten or twelve feet, either from the house or during their attempts to enter it, without hurting themselves ; then they will get up and repeat the performance, until they eventually succeed.

These dogs have habit of yelling and howling for a space of from ten to twenty minutes without intermission, and all together, so that the cries seem to be produced by one tremendously loud voice. Two or three times in the day, apparently without any reason, one of the wretched creatures began to howl, and his example was followed by them all. When this takes place at night, it has a most mournful sound. The howling of the dogs, the squeaking of the pigs—of which, as compared to the population, there are three to one—the sermons and discourses of the orators, occasionally protracted throughout the night, the voices of the women, the crying of the children, the swarms of mosquitos, the danger of going to bed and finding oneself next morning with one's head cut off—all these attractions adorn the night at Epa.





6. Headdress—Fly River.  
 2, 3. Belts—Fly River.  
 5. Jew's harp—Fly River and Hall Sound.  
 7, 8. Wood ear-rings—Kataw.  
 9, 20, 31. Musical instruments—Fly River.  
 10—12. Cocoa-nut spoons—Yule Island.  
 13. Lime gourd—Fly River and Hall Sound.  
 14—16. Marine shells used at war as protection and adornment.  
 21. Bamboo knife and *adiga*.

22. Seeds armlet.  
 23. Breast adornment.  
 24, 25. Grass bags—Fly River and Hall Sound.  
 27, 28. Doge' and pigs'-teeth necklaces.  
 29. Mother-of-pearl breastplate—Fly River, Moatta, and Hall Sound.  
 30. Woman's dress—Fly River and Hall Sound.

*April 16th.*—This morning Oa tried to create ill feeling between me and Aira. I, however, soon succeeded in setting matters right between us, and sealed our compact by kissing Aira and all the women present—about fifteen.

I shot for some hours to-day, and again brought down a fine bird of paradise, some small pigeons, and some *Campephaga sloetii*, which also inhabit the north-west of New Guinea.

I bought two earrings, made of the dried skin of a *Mizomela* (*Mizomela Rosenbergii*), from a native.

Among the ornaments of the natives I observed the feathers of the *Lophorina atra*, and of the *Xanthomelus aureus*. I was told that these birds, and others still more beautiful, are found on the highest mountains, where, I believe, nearly all the species which inhabit Mount Arfak may also be met with. The natives told me that it was a two days' march to those mountains, and I tried to persuade them to go with me to some villages on the slopes; but they would not, because they are at war with a tribe who live there, and who, according to them, belong to a distinct race. There is at Epa a slave, or servant, who belongs to that tribe, having been captured when a boy; now he is a full-grown man. Although well made and proportioned, he measures only four feet nine inches in height. His body, like his head, is entirely covered with woolly hair; and his figure and features recall to my recollection some people I saw at Ramoi in 1872, and who came from the interior.

I could not obtain any other measurement than

that of height, although I offered to give him a hatchet if he would let me measure his head. The comparison of this man with the other people of Epa, although I do not consider the type of the latter a pure one, proves to me the existence of two quite distinct races in the same island.

It is now midnight ; in the village all is still. I have completed the preparation of the skins, and my baggage is packed ; all is in readiness for a start to Nicura to-morrow.

*April 27th.*—This morning after breakfast I bade farewell to my friends at Epa, with much handshaking, some embraces, and a few tears. Aira made me promise to go and see them again ; but who knows whether I shall ever be able to keep my promises. We went by the same road we came by, and reached Nicura in the afternoon, without any incident worthy of note. When we arrived near the village, Aicci, Oa's friend, came out to meet us, and showed great joy at the return of Oa, whom he embraced warmly. I observed that they did not kiss one another, but each touched the tip of the other's nose. I took up my abode in the same house as before, and I am surrounded by the same lot of inquisitive people.

*April 28th.*—I saw the sun rise this morning with extreme pleasure. I had passed a sleepless night, owing to the continual coughing, crying, and shrieking on the part of the children, old people, dogs, and pigs.

Having made an amicable settlement of accounts with Oa and his men, I proceeded to the river, where my people, whom I had sent on with the baggage, were waiting for me. Aicci, Oa, and

Matu came as far as the river with me, and, as we were going away, told me that they had built a house for me somewhat farther from the village, in order that I might rest without being disturbed by the noises I have just mentioned.

There was again a good deal of handshaking. The oars were dipped, and we were off!

A fresh and pleasant breeze was blowing, and the air was perfumed as if by magic. Not even in the laboratory of Santa Maria Novella, at Florence, would any one on entering experience a more delicious sensation from the odours which reached his nostrils, than did I during my passage down the river. Add to this the unrippled surface of the water, the beautiful forests on the banks, the splendid palms, the singing of the birds, the fluttering of many-coloured butterflies; and you may have a faint idea of the scene that lay around and before us. It is, however, a sad drawback to New Guinea that miasma and fever mingle with the perfumes of flowers.

Among the birds I noticed, I will mention the *Gymnophas Albertisti*, a very rare species of pigeon, of which I shot two at Andai in 1872.

When I arrived at Yule, I found my people all well, except one woman. She appeared to be seriously ill.



## CHAPTER V.

I officiate as both doctor and nurse—A native funeral—We ascend the river—Nipa—A huge snake—A handsome native woman—The Mareas—My umbrella—Friendly farewells—Mou—Cleanliness of the village—Naiui—A new species of bird—Sick and lazy people—The missionary steamer—We arrange with Mr. MacFarlane—A bitter disappointment—The value of “home” letters to a traveller.

*May 1st.*—To-day Aicci, Ocona, and other natives, came and told me that some men intended to kill me, and that I should do well to go and kill them instead. No doubt this argument was reasonable; but I happened to know that the men whom they accused were their personal enemies, and thus discovered that their design was to induce me to aid them to get rid of their foes.

I explained that I wished to be friends with everybody, that so long as I did not meet with molestation I should look on all as friends, and that as a foreigner I had no right to mix myself up in private quarrels. This seemed to produce the due effect, and they went home, saying they would come back in three days to fetch an axe, which they left with me that I might sharpen it, and fix a handle in it.

The sick woman is worse.

*May 2nd.*—Some natives have visited me, one of whom was suffering from elephantiasis, or something very like it. He complained of pains in the stomach, and asked for some medicine. I had him fomented with warm spirits of wine for half-an-hour; this treatment has done him good. It appears that Aicci, who was the first at Epa to experience my healing power, has reported that I possess medicines for every disease.

Nabao presented his wife, whose name was Toto, to me, and then began to find fault with me for having given so many knives and beads to the people of Epa. I told him that if he would take me to any other village, he should receive the same amount. He said he would take me to a village on the river Bioto.

*May 6th.*—The woman whom I found so ill on my return from Epa, died to-day at half-past 4 p.m. At half-past 3 her companions came to call me, saying that she was dying. I ran to the house in which she lay, and found her screaming in delirium, so that her companions could hardly restrain her from dashing her head against the wall. I gave her some soothing medicine, and thought it possible to save her, as she still had considerable strength.

My companion is also ill, and so are four or five others. I have to act as doctor and nurse to them all, although I am far from well myself, and am much troubled with ear-ache.

*May 7th.*—The female friends and companions of the deceased, with two men of her own country, have performed the funeral ceremonies to-day. They wrapped the body in some pieces of cloth

which had belonged to the woman, to which they added some of their own, swathed it like a mummy from chin to knee, and then carried it to a grave hard by.

The men and women who accompanied the body to the grave, returned therefrom quite naked, having buried every article of clothing they possessed with it. They did not appear much grieved, nor did they lament or sing funeral dirges for above half an hour. I could not prevent them burying the body while still warm; such they told me was the custom of their country.

*May 17th.*—Nothing worthy of note has happened in the few last days. We lead our usual life, shooting and collecting animals. Reptiles abound, insects are scarce, and the birds we obtain are of little interest.

As we could not procure native guides, we determined to make an excursion up the River Nicura, and set off in a boat for that purpose this morning.

My companion and ten of our men came with me. We were obliged to lie at the mouth of the river for some time, as it was low water, and we could not cross the bar until high tide.

*May 18th.*—This morning we took advantage of the rising tide to continue our excursion up the river. Taking soundings every ten minutes, we found a varying depth of from two to three fathoms. After going a distance of from three to four miles, which took us an hour, we found the river somewhat narrower. Its course is very winding, but its direction upwards is generally easterly. In the first few miles from its mouth, the banks are

covered with nipa and mangroves, but somewhat farther in the interior we found plains covered with grass, eucalyptus-trees, and other vegetation.

When we had rowed for about two hours, we came to a hill, whose base is washed by the river; on it we saw a house and a plantation of banana trees, but no natives. When, however, we had gone a little further, we found a canoe with a man and two women from Nicura, who had come to procure a supply of "nipa" wherewith to make "piri." After rowing for three hours, we found that the river bifurcates, and that we had only two narrow channels before us. We decided upon following the one to the right, which, although the largest of the two, measures only forty paces in breadth. Mangroves were no longer to be seen, but the banks were closely covered with nipa trees, whose long leaves, overhanging the river, formed arches above its narrowest parts. In places they actually impeded our passage, and we had to cut our way through them with hatchets; nor were these the only obstacle we had to encounter, for we had also to cut our way through some thick wood before we could proceed.

We observed a huge snake, of the *Liasis* genus, in a tree which overhung the water. I fired at it with small shot, but could not bring it down, although wounded, until it had received the contents of several barrels, when it fell into the water, and for a long time I could not recover it, my men being too much afraid to go in after it. At last, however, I managed to grasp it and drag it on board.

We continued to ascend the stream for several

miles, always with a depth of from two to three fathoms, until at last we were forced to stop by the trunks of trees which barred our way. In the meantime the tide had turned, and the water became so low that, when we returned from a short walk in the forest, we found the boat completely high and dry—that is, stuck in the mud, which covers the bed of the creek where she lay—and we were compelled to wait for high water to get her afloat. Thus vanished all the fine hopes I had conceived from reading the description of this river, discovered during the voyage of H.M.S. "Basilisk."

While we were on shore, I measured the serpent I had shot, and found it nineteen feet (English) in length. As the snake was too large to preserve, I skinned it, and prepared the skeleton. In its stomach I found the remains of a good-sized kangaroo. I obtained some specimens of the most beautiful *stafilinus* I have ever seen. These insects were attracted by the smell of the entrails of the snake. My men cooked the flesh, which I myself tasted, and can testify that it was not so bad, although tough and too sweet. The toughness is not to be wondered at, however, as the snake must have been very old. Soup made of its flesh was most excellent. In the evening we encamped near the landing-pier which belongs to a village called Urape.

The results of to-day's experience are as follows:—first, the destruction of the hopes I had formed as to the existence of a large river; secondly, a serpent and three frogs to add to my collection, besides a large cat-fish (*silurus*) which

my men caught this evening, and on which we supped. The river, if it can be called one, can have very little importance in the future destiny of this country.

There are some fine hills, but the nature of the soil makes me doubt their fertility, while, on the other hand, the plains, now covered luxuriantly with long grass and eucalyptus-trees, may prove suitable for growing crops proper to a semi-tropical country.

The next day we returned to Roro, and I found that one of my men, whom I had left behind, had disappeared. He is one of the four who came from the island of New Britain.

On the 22nd, Tommidel, another of the four, stole a large knife, which I always take with me into the forest. At first he denied the theft, but, afterwards admitting it, refused, at the instigation of Tannau, to restore the knife. I threatened to keep him a prisoner in my room until he gave it up, but he escaped through the window and joined Tannau in the forest.

As they did not return, I sent Tambuabua and Tomana to treat with them and offer them forgiveness, if they would return, fearing lest they should rob the natives and thus arouse their wrath. Tambuabua, however, could not induce them to come back. On the night of the 26th, at half-past 2 a.m., Arnold and John awoke me, and told me that Tomana and Tambuabua had fled, taking the oars, rudder, and sail of the boat; and I soon proved the truth of what they said, for, on lighting a lamp, I discovered they had carried off those articles, but by a strange chance

had forgotten to take my knife. They had evidently used it to cut the cords that fastened the sails, but had left it on the table. One of the women, who slept in the same house as Tambuabua and Tomana, had become aware of their design, and had gone at once to John and Arnold, and begged them to tell me. These two fools, however, thought fit to say nothing, and let me sleep until the woman came again and told them that four New Britain men had taken the boat and escaped. I ran to the beach, but saw nothing of them; so now behold me a prisoner on this island. We have been expecting the "Ellangowan" for some days, but she does not appear, and we have consumed all our meat and rice. Having no boat in which to go to the mainland to shoot, if the natives should prove unwilling to sell us what we want, we run a risk of dying of hunger.

*May 31st.*—The month of May is at an end; may June begin and end under more auspicious circumstances! One of the women is dead, four of the men have fled with our boat, and left us prisoners in the island, and many of my people have been more or less ill. My companion is much weakened by fever, my collections are insignificant, and we have before us a prospect of dying of hunger, if the "Ellangowan" does not arrive. A pleasant chronicle of the merry month of May!

To-day I was lucky enough to shoot three *Megapodius*, which was indeed fortunate, for we had had no meat for some days. The natives sell us bananas and yams, but, knowing the straits to which we are reduced, ask outrageous prices for them. Some natives came to-day, whom I did not

know, and when I refused to buy their cocoa-nuts because they asked too much in exchange, they went away enraged, and, passing by a well we had dug, they threw some filth into it. I fired two barrels of my revolver into the air, but as, I suppose, they were not aware of the range of fire-arms, they replied with contempt and insults. A ball from my rifle, however, which hit a tree near them, put them to flight. When I complained to Matciu about what had occurred, he seemed very angry, and helped my men to carry a barrel of water from the spring. My snake continues to do well ; it has twice cast its skin, is well-behaved and tame, and does not attempt to escape, even when I put it in the sun outside the house ; and when I go to bring it in, it comes to me of its own accord. It never attempts to bite, even when I caress or tease it. It will not eat, but drinks once or twice a week. While I am working, I often hold it on my knees, where it remains for hours ; sometimes it raises its head, and licks my face with its forked tongue. It is a true friend and companion to me. When the natives bother me, it is useful in putting them to flight, for they are much afraid of it ; it is quite sufficient for me to let my snake loose to make them fly at full speed.

*June 5th.*—I was fortunate enough to be able to supply our larder by a successful day in the forest.

Some more natives, strangers to me, came to-day ; they belong to a village called Baima, and seem to be rich people. Among them were two girls, who, allowing for the difference in colour, need not have been afraid to compete with many



a fair European in beauty. I should in fact call one, Ureure by name, the Papuan Venus. I shall not soon forget her beautiful eyes, which were a marvel of beauty and vivacity, nor her good manners, nor the air of intelligence in all her gestures and words. She burst out laughing when she saw herself in my looking-glass, and then put on a necklace I had given her.

The names of the men who came from Baima are, Poror, Ume, Aku, Baki, and Imo; of the women, Ureure, Abia, Aiba. They brought me fish of three kinds, which they call *Cururu*, *Noba*, and *Parara*.

For some days past, an Australian bird, the *Scythrops Novæ Hollandiæ*, has begun its passage; I have several, but mostly hens. The *Carpophaga spilorrhœa* has become very numerous during its passage, and in the morning and evening we see flights of thousands of them, which last for hours. *Calornis metallica*, which have covered a large tree near the spring whence we draw water, also pass by myriads over our house, and to-day for the first time I have seen their young.

*June 8th.*—The days pass by without variety. Little is done for my collection—much less than might be. My men prefer talking and smoking round the fire by night, and sleeping in the forest by day. The natives bring me few specimens, and I have to depend on my own arms and legs for work. When I am tired, nothing is done. The head man of a village called Bereina told me that there were several *Raggianas*; but he knew nothing about other birds of paradise which I showed him.

He was a very grave but pleasant-mannered man ; he was adorned with several shell bracelets, and wore a plume of cockatoos' feathers. He had with him a light-coloured woman, and two children who were so fair that they might have passed for white.

The expected steamer does not come, and I have tried to buy a canoe from the natives, but without success.

*June 11th.*—Being invited by Naimi to go with him to Mou, the place of his abode, some miles in the interior of New Guinea north of Roro, I accepted his offer, and this morning started off alone with him and his two wives—the queen, and a coarse-looking old woman, who is an invalid, and has no influence. Fearing lest the steamer should arrive during my absence, I told Naimi that I must get back to-day to Yule Island. But when I spoke of returning in the afternoon, he put so many difficulties in the way that I was forced to consent to spend the night here at Mou, with a promise from him that I shall return to-morrow. He wants me to stay several days. I came here, however, without provisions or means of adding to my collections, having only a few cartridges with me, and a few bottles of spirits of wine for preserving insects and small reptiles.

We started early, and coasted along the north of Roro for about half its length ; then tacking, we stood for Kobio, or Mount Yule, and, crossing Hall Sound, entered a smaller bay, surrounded by mangroves. Turning then somewhat to the east, we found a bifurcation, the right arm of

which apparently comes from the north-north-east, and the other from the west. We took the latter, which has the appearance of a river, but the water is salt. I was told that the former is really a river, having its source in the mountains.

After some miles we arrived at a landing-place, when we found fifteen canoes, and there we landed.

This landing-place serves for three villages, Mou, Miori, and Erine. Miori lies in a grove of cocoa-nut-trees only a few paces from the bank. Although I knew some of the inhabitants, the greater number of them had never seen me, or, in fact, any white man. Their curiosity was therefore greatly aroused at the news of my arrival, and a crowd of inquisitive people came to meet me; most of them were, however, so much afraid, that the women and children, after one glance at me, fled. Passing through this village, where we were not to stay, because we were going on to Mou, I was amazed at the number, size, and construction of the houses, which are in two rows facing one another; between them runs a broad, clean road, covered with very fine white sand. At the end of this long road I saw a large house, which, from its peculiar form, and the ornaments with which the front was decorated, I at once took for a temple.

The natives call these buildings "*Marea*," and in them they receive their friends and strangers. A large boat turned upside down, cut at one end, and a kind of rostrum raised in continuation of the keel, rises in front of it, and forms a sort of

porch over the main entrance. To this are attached festoons of leaves, like a very long fringe.

The houses are built on piles, and the sides are formed of trunks of trees arranged like a colonnade. These columns are painted black, white, and red, and in the houses reptiles are carved on their tops. I saw several trophies, composed of painted shields, lances, and drums. In front of each house is a raised platform, a little lower than the floor, surrounded with high palings, to which are attached festoons of grass, and trophies of bones and heads of animals; I did not, however, see any human skulls.

On the whole, I must admit that a considerable amount of taste as well as architectural science has been displayed in the building of these houses.

I should have liked attentively to study the details of their construction; but Naimi was in a hurry to start for Mou.

For some distance our way lay through plantations of cocoa-nut and banana-trees, and we then found ourselves in Naimi's village, where he at once conducted us to his own marea, which is certainly not so imposing an edifice as that we had seen at Miori. The floor is raised very high above the ground, and a ladder is necessary in order to reach it. In the village there are several of these mareas, for every head man has one of his own, and there are ten headmen in Mou. These buildings vary more or less in construction and ornamentation, according to the means and taste of the owners, who receive friends and strangers in them, and also assemble there for conversation and sleep.

The women are not allowed to enter these houses; they have others, set apart for themselves near their husbands' mareas. The women's houses are rectangular in shape, and are closed to the eyes of the profane. This marea has its name, like our hotels in Europe, and is called Ara-raba, while that of Matciu, which stands in front of it, is called Rabao. Naimi's house is ornamented, inside and out, with pigeons, very cleverly carved by the natives, who make them of wood and cover them with tupuna, painted white and black to imitate the *Carpophaga*, which abounds in these countries. Matoiu's marea, unlike the others, is low, and has two platforms at the sides. It has also three rows of richly-ornamented canopies. The wooden cornices are painted with the customary red, black, and white. One of these buildings surpassed all the others in size, beauty, and decorations. It boasted numerous trophies of bows and arrows, spears and shields, besides several carved images of iguanas and a number of posts, each terminating in the representation of a human head. From its roof hung a painted piece of wood, carved to represent the naked body of a man, with feet like those of a bird.

These mareas have no doors, and the other houses have doors, but no windows. The platform or verandah in front of the mareas is called Airaba. Here the natives slaughter their pigs and dogs, and here they eat their dinner. The loftiest of the trees, on which are suspended the finest trophies, has a special name, being called Oboro.

I was barely installed in Naimi's verandah

when nearly all the principal people of the village—or, as I might call it, the town—came, and were presented to me, by name and quality, as is the custom in these parts. The mareas, doubtless, are used on grand occasions or festivals, when the natives probably adorn them with their choicest possessions.

When I left the marea, several women were presented to me, and among them a coquettish damsel, daughter of one of the head men. She was not able to make much of her person, because nature had not been favourable to her; but to atone for this, she appeared before me so adorned with necklaces of dogs' and crocodiles' teeth, shells, and tortoiseshell trinkets, as to appear quite heavily laden—in fact, her breast was completely hidden. After the presentation she continued to strut about majestically, pluming herself upon her riches. Taking out of my pocket some red ribands, I adorned the head and arms of this peacock, according to my taste, at which she was excessively pleased, and repaid my courtesy with many a sweet smile; then, taking me by the hand, she led me to her father's verandah, and, as she could not go inside, she made me sit down in the verandah with her; after which, still holding my hand, she took me back to my own abode. I then deplored the aversion with which I regard matrimony. Had it not been for that, I believe I might have been accepted by this Papuan princess.

The houses at Mou are also built in two rows, and the road which divides them is over twenty yards wide. Behind the house there is a space

of about the same width, cleared of trees ; behind that, all is forest and mud. The ground on which the village stands is covered by the natives with white sand.

The strictest cleanliness prevails everywhere.

There is a third village, called Erine, not more than two or three minutes' walk from Mou, though really all three may be described as three different quarters of the same town, consisting of about fifteen hundred inhabitants.

The numerous pigs and dogs constitute the chief wealth of the people in these villages. They have also some white cockatoos, which they keep for the sake of their feathers ; and I saw a couple of hens, which I fancy they must have obtained from the " Basilisk." I did not see many birds in the vicinity of these three villages, and I only killed some small fly-catchers ; I was, besides, prevented from using my gun, because the women were afraid of it.

Naimi placed at my disposal two of his servants, who loaded themselves with food and water for me, and also with fuel for making a fire.

My umbrella excited general admiration, and the people called it Apo-apo, from its resemblance to the silvery texture of the wings of the *Pteropus*, which they know by that name. They could not understand how the spring acted ; more than twenty of them tried to open it, but in vain. Seeing how easily I shut and opened the implement, they thought there must be some magic in it, and as they were afraid, they laid it aside.

*June 12th.*—This morning I took leave of my new friends, with much regret on both sides, and

departed very early. Many of the people of both villages accompanied me to the pier; and when my canoe left the bank, there was a general shout of farewell, and invitations to return soon. At the same time, a canoe with eight women only started with us. They were all young, merry, and light-hearted, and they sang one of their most melodious songs, keeping time with their oars; in the light of the rising sun, their skins shone like their eyes. Their voices and gestures, the gliding of the canoe over the smooth water, the morning breeze, the delicate perfume of the mangrove flowers, and the fine figures of these young and simple daughters of nature, made me think of the fables of my childhood, and, while observing them, I felt as though in a dream.

We rowed alongside for some miles. The captivating and vain princess, who was yesterday so polite to me, was of the number, and, sitting in the bows, she darted sweet smiles and killing glances at me the whole time. At last, however, we were compelled to leave these fair sirens behind, and, hoisting our sail, we were soon at Roro.

I saw many children, at Mou and Miori, afflicted with horrible ulcers in the groin, under the armpits, and round the mouth. Three of the men had immense swellings in the groin and thighs, which come, I believe, from binding tupuna so tightly round them.

The "Ellangowan" does not appear, and we are suffering much from want of animal food. I myself feel I cannot live much longer on bananas; and so great is my longing for meat, that I think myself lucky when I can secure a large serpent or



iguana (*monitor*). The flesh of the former is not very good, and the flavour is too sweet, besides which there is much bone and little meat; the iguana, however, is savoury, delicate, and fat.

A large canoe, coming from Waima, a village on the mainland, and lying to the north-west of Roro, passed to-day. It seems the people of that place are wealthy, and that they trade largely in cocoa-nuts. The canoe was full of these nuts, which they were taking for sale at a village called Pokao, east-south-east of Roro.

*June 19th.*—To-day I made an excursion into that part of the island which looks southward. I found some large plantations of bananas, and yams; and a few cocoa-nut-trees and sugar-canes. The natives' houses are scattered through these plantations, but there are no villages. Every plantation is enclosed within a stockade. The aspect of the places I have visited was cheerful, owing to the luxuriant vegetation. The whole land is under cultivation, and there is no forest left, except on the crest of the hills behind the plantation. The soil which is not actually under cultivation is rich in grass. The natives call their gardens or plantations "*Biraura*." I saw many people hard at work, and could thus account for the appearance of certain fields, which were so well and evenly tilled that I thought some machine must have been used; it seemed to me only a plough could run furrows with such precision. I was, however, soon convinced that all had been done by manual labour. The natives form gangs of eight or ten men, each man holding in either hand a very hard wooden pole, sharpened to

a point, over six feet long and from an inch to an inch and a half thick. These men stand in a row, and, at a given signal, plant their rods in the ground, repeating the operation several times until they have penetrated to the required depth, which is generally about a foot. This done, they bear down on the other end of the poles, making them act as levers, and thus loosen a long piece of ground, ten to thirteen yards long and from a foot to a foot and a half wide; then, by alternate heaving up and bearing down, the large mass of soil is upturned; and as they take great care to preserve the same measurements and distances, regularity like that of the action of a plough is produced.

Some of the chief men of Mou, and especially Naimi and Matciu, possess a good deal of land here, which they cultivate. The aborigines of Roro are confined to the north-west part of the island, and, owing to their being less intelligent and enterprising than the people of Mou, they give way before them, regarding them as invaders. The real inhabitants of Roro are also physically inferior.

I had an opportunity to-day of observing the effects of the action of the sun on the skin of the natives; and I saw that the portions usually covered with bracelets, &c., are always of a lighter colour than those parts of the body which are always exposed to the air. Many of my men are ill, and little is done towards adding to my collections, except in the way of insects and reptiles.

To-day I found the outside wings of a *lomoptera*, which must belong to some magnificent but

unknown species. On showing this object to the natives, they told me it will be common enough in two or three months. Throughout the length of the island a bird is found, which I believe has not yet been noted among the birds of New Guinea. It belongs to the genus *Polophilus*, known to inhabit Australia. I think, especially from observing its habits, that the bird found here is possibly a new species.

When I was in Australia, I saw the two species that exist there, and observed that, though they often run in the grass to hunt insects, they spend most of their time in trees, and can fly for long distances. The bird found here, on the contrary, is purely a runner, and seldom flies, preferring to run among the long grass both when hunting insects and when making its escape. When forced to fly, it does not alight on trees, but on bushes, from which it often drops into the grass. Now that insects are found in abundance in the trunks of trees which have been felled near the house, I often see the bird running through the grass, or under the trees, in its hunts after grasshoppers. I have tried to get it to fly by throwing stones or beating the grass with a stick. Its thick plumage must be a great protection from the dry grass and branches it must necessarily encounter during its hunts after insects and its flights from danger. The species found at Somerset, on the contrary, flies from the grass up to the highest trees, the tops of which it reaches by flying from branch to branch, beginning with the lowest.

I must note a peculiarity about this bird, here

as well as at Somerset. I found, on dissecting several male birds, that they had only one testicle.

There are still many sick and lazy people about me. Our position is most critical, and I cannot succeed in purchasing or borrowing a canoe.

*June 20th.*—After we had finished our sorry breakfast this morning, which, as usual, we ate outside the house under the shade of a large tree, we were ruefully considering the prospect of a still more sorry dinner, when I discovered a thin thread of smoke rising behind the trees which hide the sea towards the south. A ray of hope illumined my heart, and I cried, "The missionaries' steamer!" and ran up the hill as high as I could to get a better view. I saw, however, nothing but smoke. It was a moment of cruel suspense. Had I been mistaken? or had the natives set fire to the grass? I made my way back to the house, much downcast, thinking that, unless some natives come, we might literally have nothing to eat.

It was not destined to be so, for a short time afterwards we descried the masts of the "Ellangowan" behind the farther point of the bay, and some natives came to announce the glad tidings to us. Only those who have been in similar circumstances can imagine my joy at that moment. At last the "Ellangowan" was at anchor, and a canoe soon took me on board. I shook hands with Mr. MacFarlane, and, finding he was compelled to depart shortly for Port Moresby, being already behind his time, I asked him to return and give me a passage to the coast of New Guinea, as I did not wish to leave the neighbourhood,

though I could not be a prisoner on this island. I likewise begged him to take Signor Tomasinelli, who was compelled by failing health, and the news brought by the steamer of his brother's death, to return home.

Although at first there appeared to be serious difficulties in the way of obtaining what we wanted from Mr. MacFarlane, in the end we came to an understanding, and he promised to return this way from Port Moresby.

The pleasure I felt at the arrival of the "Ellan-gowan" was somewhat marred by the fact of my receiving no letters from Europe. In the interest of all explorers, I must say that not to receive letters after many months of expectation is indeed hard; and to feel himself so soon forgotten by distant friends, to whom the traveller has given many a thought, is a cruel experience. Nothing tends so much to sustain a traveller in a strange and distant country as letters from his friends.

## CHAPTER VI.

Our monotonous life again—A visit from people from the far interior of New Guinea—No more dread of hunger—It never rains but it pours—Naimi's canoe—Barter with Pakao—A huge Liasis—Their parasites—I figure as a rain-maker—A new-born infant—Matciu and the canoe—I win the Natives—Felling trees by dynamite—Pilfering of the Natives—Departure for Bioto and Naiabui—A strange combat at Night—Naiabui—I establish a friendship with the Natives—"Music hath charms"—I return to Yule Island, find my house has been robbed, and take measures to enforce restitution.

*June 21st.*—The "Ellangowan" is gone, and we are again leading our monotonous life. The natives are loading themselves with our boxes, landed by the "Ellangowan," and are to carry them to the house for a small gratuity. I have found no cases of spirits in which to preserve my animals, and as I shall not be able to get any before September, I foresee that I shall lose many good chances in consequence. Naimi, hearing I am prepared to leave the island on the return of the steamer, promises to sell me a canoe.

*June 23rd.*—Some people came to-day from a village in the interior of New Guinea—at least, so they tell me. The name of the village, which

is in the mountains, is, they say, Naiabui. I was invited to spend some days there, and, if the natives keep their promise, I am to set off in two days; but on these promises I rely very little indeed.

*June 24th.*—Now the house is full of stores, and we have no longer hunger to dread; fortune, as if in mockery, has come to our aid. I succeeded in killing, with dynamite, 250 fish, weighing about a pound and a half each. This greatly astonished the natives, and the scene which followed the slaughter of the fish was most curious. About twenty natives rivalled one another in grasping the dead fish, and swimming and diving after those that sank to the bottom. They all brought what they could find, with the exception of one individual who tried to put some aside for himself. He was found out by the others, who obliged him to surrender his prize. Keeping thirty fishes for myself and my people, I gave the rest to the natives, thus delighting them immensely.

Naimi has at last handed over to me the canoe he promised, but I have to pay a very high price for it. After concluding the bargain, I saw a woman apply a cure to her little son's legs and arms, which were afflicted with ulcers. The cure consisted in pressing a stone hatchet, heated in the fire, against the wounds. The patient's heartrending shrieks were beyond description.

The Waima canoes returned to-day from Pokao; their owners had received kangaroos in exchange for cocoa-nuts. It appears that the inhabitants of the latter place pay little attention to the culti-

vation of the soil, and live chiefly by hunting, exchanging the animals they kill for vegetables. I often see, in the direction of this village, huge columns of smoke rising from grassy places which are fired by the natives, so as to drive the forest animals into nets, where they kill them.

*June 28th.*—My health is not so good as I could wish, and I feel very weak. We had a little rain last night, and this morning there are swarms of insects in the trunks of the trees near the house. I obtained a large *liasis*, whose skin and skeleton I preserved, it being too large to keep whole in spirits of wine. These snakes are always haunted by quantities of parasite worms. In the viscera of the snake in question, I found a tape-worm of enormous size; myriads of *ascarides* in the stomach, and a third sort of parasite, new to me, which had attacked the lungs.

*June 29th.*—My legs are much swollen. When I went to the beach to try my canoe, I found Matciu had taken it and gone out fishing.

*July 2nd.*—It rained all last night and all day to-day. Matciu at last returned with the canoe, and I received him in a manner which I think will induce him to refrain from taking it again without leave. Some of the natives asked me if I made it rain to revenge myself on Matciu. They do not like rain at this season, because it prevents their working in the plantations. I naturally replied that I had made it rain, and would do so again, every time they did anything to displease me. I was shown a new-born child, a few hours old. Its eyes were open, its hair was smooth, fair, and rather long. The colour of its



skin was yellowish-white, the palms of its hands and the soles of its feet were pink. The mother was seated in one of the houses on the beach. The father seemed much pleased at the happy event.

*July 3rd.*—Matciu had the impertinence to endeavour to go out in my canoe again, but one of the natives told me, and I arrived in time to stop him. He told me that if I wanted the canoe I must pay him as much as I had paid Naimi for it. I showed him my revolver, and made him clearly understand I would fire at him if ever I saw him in the boat again. I foresee I shall have some trouble about the canoe, and am apprehensive lest some night it should be carried off.

*July 4th.*—I went to the beach where the people of Mou were encamped, and again asked to see the baby who was born the other day; the mother herself showed him to me with pleasure. I observed the little one had grown much darker in colour. The mother told me she should name him Maria, by which name they call me here, not being able to pronounce Luigi or D'Albertis. I suggested it should be called Italia, to which she consented, and, raising the child as high as she could, she exclaimed "Italia!" while all the natives present repeated the name several times.

*July 5th.*—I went to-day to some new plantations. Naimi was absent, and some natives asked me whether the land under my feet was mine. I replied that it was not; whereupon they ordered me off, which command I naturally refused to obey, and, half angry, half amused, I continued my walk until I came to a house where

an old woman gave me a seat. By degrees they became more civil, and they ultimately offered to take me to their other plantations.

*July 7th.*—Yesterday afternoon the missionary steamer arrived, and Mr. MacFarlane landed to cut wood. We were surrounded by a crowd of natives, and I entertained them with the interesting spectacle of felling trees by means of dynamite. The trees fell with a tremendous crash, causing great astonishment.

We gave Mr. MacFarlane and the captain of the steamer as good a dinner as lay within our means, and at five o'clock we went on board with them, taking with us all the specimens we had collected here. When we were on board we found the natives had attempted to steal some articles of iron-ware, and that the engineer had been obliged to threaten them with his revolver. It is curious that on each occasion when the steamer has been here the natives have attempted to pilfer, while I have nothing to complain of on that score.

*July 8th.*—This morning I went on board a little before sunrise, taking some letters. The anchor was weighed, the steam was up, and, after the usual parting handshakings, I was let down into my canoe, and the "Ellangowan" started. In a few minutes our friends were a good way off, and I could hardly see their last salutations. In less than half an hour, nothing was visible but the smoke of the steamer; and now I am really alone. I do not regret this, for my companion's health did not admit of his being very useful, but rather the contrary, and I was in a state of

perpetual anxiety about him. Now that he is gone, although I am alone, I feel relieved from a responsibility. Naimi came to tell me he was going to Mou with his people. He took away an axe he had left with me to sharpen, told me the canoe he had sold me would certainly be stolen, and added that the women in my employment were intriguing with some young men, and will probably run away with them.

Although I believe little in the natives' promises when they are to my advantage, there seems to be some ground for this ill-omened prophecy.

*July 10th.*—My snake continues to feed well, and is casting his slough for the third time. My people are somewhat improved in health, owing to their better diet.

*July 20th.*—I settled to make an excursion to Naiabui with the natives, and to-day I have been working like a slave in preparing the necessary amount of baggage for an absence of eight days, also in erecting a small roof over my canoe, under which I may be able to sleep at a push, and keep my possessions under shelter from the rain.



*Eupholus Bennetti.*

A girl came and presented me with a leaf, in which an insect was wrapped up. Collectors will understand my surprise and delight on finding that the leaf enclosed one of the finest insects of New Guinea, of a hitherto unknown species, so distinct from any other, that I do not hesitate to assert it has never been discovered before. It is of the genus *Eupholus*, and

by far the most beautiful of its kind. The covering of its wing-cases, which is quite different from that of any kindred species, is enough to distinguish it. If I were writing a description of it, I should present it to entomologists under the name of *Eupholus Bennettii* in memory of my friend, Dr. George Bennett, of Sydney.

Another native brought me a species of Lomoptera, which I believe to be unknown, and which is certainly much more beautiful than any of its class that I am acquainted with.

After dinner some of the natives came to complain that one of my men had stolen two cocoa-nuts from one of their women while she was asleep. Calling all my people together, I made the natives point out the thief, whereupon I first administered a thrashing to him, and then told them to repeat the dose, if they did not consider him sufficiently punished, and the man whose wife had been robbed gave him a second beating. I then dismissed the natives, telling them I would allow them to take the law into their own hands. It is painful to have to blush before these natives for the ill behaviour of my men, especially as they can obtain as many bananas and cocoa-nuts as they like from me.

*July 21st.*—We had to start very early this morning, and Naimi and Matciu were to have come; Nabao, however, arrived to tell me that they left for Mou before dawn. It appears some violent conjugal disputes arose last night, and the men and women came to blows. I had heard howling and shrieking all night long, without being able to ascertain the cause.

At ten o'clock I set out with Nabao, escorted by all the natives, who saw my banner for the first time hoisted over a canoe. We ascended the Nicura as far as its junction with the Bioto, whose course we then followed for several miles. It, however, hardly deserves the name of river, for its depth is only four or five feet, and at this season it is anything but rapid. Our course was often interrupted by trunks of trees, and after going some miles, we were brought to a stop for want of water to float the canoe. I saw eleven crocodiles as we went along, and, only succeeded in killing one, with an explosive bullet. A misfortune occurred about this time. Nabao, who was not well practised in the use of our axes, cut one of his great toes almost in half. I observed that, in order to stop the bleeding, he heated some water, and, when it was all but boiling, put his foot into it.

In a short time we were high and dry; a canoe with some women passed, and they gave notice at Bioto of our arrival. An hour later, two canoes came, with some of the inhabitants. In spite of the shades of night, now falling fast, I could see these people were all adorned with feathers and necklaces. They offered to take me and my baggage to their village in the canoes, but, as it was night and rain was falling, I preferred sleeping in my own canoe. Nabao and the others set off, leaving me alone with a boy.

*July 22nd.*—Here we are at last at Naiabui, which is not in the mountains, as I had been told it was. This morning, soon after sunrise, three canoes from Bioto fetched my baggage, and I went

in one of them to the village. We took an hour to reach it. The river continues the same breadth—that is, from thirty to forty yards—but becomes more and more shallow. The vegetation on the banks is luxuriant, and I could see large banana and breadfruit plantations, all belonging to the village of Bioto.

On my arrival, the usual scene of mingled curiosity and fear was enacted, but I was well received; and although we were only staying here until Naimi and Matciu should arrive, as we were expecting, they offered me a *marea* for my own use.

Bioto is a large village on the left bank, as one ascends, but, although larger than Mou or Miori, it is not so imposing.

When Naimi arrived, we departed, a party of about fifty, many women being of the number; my baggage was carried on the backs of a number of natives. It took about three hours' rapid walking, almost always along a winding path, through large plantations of bananas, and shielded by the leaves of that beautiful tree from the scorching rays of the shining mid-day sun. Now and then we made a short halt to await the slower among our companions, and once I was almost forced into a *marea* which we passed in the midst of a plantation. I cannot make out why they were so anxious I should go in there. At length we reached Naiabui, where I was received in a *marea*, according to custom, and where the head men of the village were presented to me. The women and children would not come near me. It is now ten o'clock at night, and I

have not yet succeeded in making friends with them. They fly at the mere sight of me.

This is a large village ; the houses are nearly all in two rows, but with a very broad intervening space. There are no mareas much decorated ; but the few buildings of this sort that do exist resemble in their construction those at Mou.

The horizon is hidden on all sides by plantations of bananas.

I do not think this place abounds in birds, but I hope for a good collection of insects, as, in coming along I found more than twenty species of coleoptera, some of them most beautiful.

*July 23rd.*—Having caused a small enclosed place to be erected for me near the house, I shut myself up in it to perform my morning ablutions. A crowd of people were collected around, but I took no notice of them, thinking they could not see me. Hearing several exclamations of “Hi ! ha !” I looked up, and was not a little astonished to perceive a number of natives, especially women, that had climbed on the roof, and were probably studying the difference in colour between my skin and theirs—that is to say, the skin of that part of my body which is ordinarily covered, for I have partly adopted Papuan customs, so that much of my body is habitually uncovered, and the skin very little fairer than that of many of the natives. But it seems they are curious to learn the natural colour of my skin, and not that produced by exposure to the sun.

On my way to the shooting-grounds, I passed through several plantations of bananas, and here and there through fields of long grass.

There is little woodland, and what there is appears to be of recent growth. I shot only a few birds, but found some most interesting insects, among them seven splendid specimens of *Eupholus Bennettii*. I returned home at one o'clock to preserve my spoils. Among them are some very fine reptiles, in which the country seems to be rich.

The remainder of the day I passed in trying to make friends with the women and children, so as to secure their valuable services in forming my collections. In order to overcome their fears, I offered presents to any of them who would come and receive them from my hands. One, more courageous than the others, seeing a piece of red cloth, ran up, and, climbing the ladder to the marea, received the prize. I did not give it her, however, until she had shaken hands with me. The poor thing trembled, and her terror was only equalled by the amusement it excited among the rest. I then offered presents to the other women; and the same scene was repeated several times, and I was beginning to congratulate myself on my success, when Nabao came up and begged me to stop. On my asking the reason, he said that Ateate, the head man of the village, was displeased at seeing these women receive presents, while his own women, who had not come, got none. I looked up, and saw Ateate looking very angry, and as I had no wish to interrupt our good understanding, I desisted.

Naimi, Matciu, and Nabao want to depart tomorrow, and leave me here alone. They told me, whether in jest or not I cannot say, that, when I return to Roro, I shall find my house



plundered. I said I had no fear they would be so wicked, but that if anything of the kind did happen, I should know how to punish the thief.

*July 24th.*—Last night, just as I closed my journal and was preparing for bed, the sound of many voices brought me into the verandah. As the coming storm is announced by the distant rumbling of thunder and the rustling of the leaves, so the confused noise of voices bespoke imminent commotion in the place. By degrees, the howling, the cries, and the chattering increased to such an extent as to make me fear something serious was about to happen. Every one with me in the marea ran to see or take part in the fray, and only two old men were left, who told me not to fear. I replied, "I know no fear;" but, unseen by them, I put a couple of cartridges into my gun, and ascertained that my revolver was in good order.

In the meantime, matters had gone from bad to worse, and assumed an aspect both strange and fantastic. The sound of blows began to reach my ear. Both combatants and spectators carried burning brands, which they twirled about in every direction, and which, by their lurid glow, and the sparks they emitted, reminded me of a display of fireworks.

From every part of the village fresh actors, only visible in the darkness by the torches they carried, kept arriving on the scene. The sound of blows given and received, and the laments and groans of the wounded, were mingled with the uproar; men and women were fighting furiously. Presently, and as if by enchantment, bonfires

arose in front of the houses in different parts of the village. Near the fires and close to the house, women stood, like sentries, holding long torches, by whose light the forms and "nakibis" of these impromptu vestals could be distinguished. Others, sitting before the houses, were busy stirring up the flames of the bonfires, whence arose great clouds of smoke, which, hardly stirred by the faint breeze, enveloped the whole scene, and on rising, revealed groups of combatants. The scene of the combat shifted from one place to another—now close by, now some way off. These changes made it still more interesting and fantastic, for on each occasion a fresh rush for brands and torches ensued. Men armed with spears, women gesticulating and shrieking, were seen rushing about like spectres. Words were followed by blows, then came weeping and wailing, then more blows and then howlings.

My two old friends kept telling me to fear nothing, and, judging from their appearance, they enjoyed the scene no less than I did. At last, after about an hour and a half, the strength of the combatants was probably becoming spent, and the strife I have described began to calm down. The bonfires and torches went out; only a distant rumbling, now loud, now subdued, now near, now far, proving that passion still animated the field of battle, remained of what had been so violent a hurricane. This lasted some time, and peace was then restored. Orators, however, still waged a war of words from the mareas, continuing until morning. I think I have been present at one of the most curious spectacles to be seen in this country.

This morning, many, especially among the women, bore tokens of last night's work.

I have preserved twenty bird-skins, representing ten species, some of which I have found for the first time in New Guinea, while others are altogether new to me. The natives have brought in many insects and reptiles. This is a first-rate locality.

In the afternoon, came seventy natives, inhabitants of a village called Anapokao, which they say is in the mountains, towards Mount Kobio. None of them have ever set eyes on a white man before, and their curiosity and surprise are great; fear, however, hinders them from examining me closely. The women are timid, and a look is enough to make them fly from my presence. These people do not differ in physique from those of Naiabui, and they wear the same kind of ornaments. They all seem healthy and robust, and are rather fat, especially the women, who wear the nakibi, reduced to the smallest possible proportions. Many of them were adorned with leaves of the croton plant, of all shapes and colours, tastefully arranged. The children here amuse themselves with spinning pegtops. These are sometimes made of wood, more generally of the common areca nut, which the children spin with a string and then keep up by using the string for a whip, exactly as European children do. They sometimes have free fights, in which they use areca-nuts and pieces of cocoa-nut as projectiles. Some of the youths of the village came and presented themselves to me this evening; they were all highly adorned, and were

really well worth looking at. Their ornaments consisted principally of birds' feathers, and necklaces made of teeth and shells. The cartilages of their noses are perforated, and in them they wear cylindrical ornaments of white shell.

*July 25th.*—I set out from the village at half-past seven, and crossed a vast plain covered with grass and reeds, but in some few places only did I see signs of newly-grown forest. The aspect of the country is Australian, and so are the birds I met with; I found the *Clamydodera cerviniventris*, the *Pachycephala melanura*, and species of *Munia*, *Cisticola* and *Malurus*, and others well known in Australia. I also found one of those buildings of the *Clamydodera* (Bower-Bird) called bowers, which are made of dry sticks. Its form is two side-walls, somewhat depressed towards the centre, and placed on a base made of dry sticks only, about a foot in height and three and a half feet in length—the two walls forming a gallery or corridor. All round this place of assembly I found clusters of bright-coloured fruits. I killed some fine full-grown male birds of the *Malurus* (*M. alboscapulatus*), and, having succeeded in catching a young bird, not long out of the nest, I observed that its cries attracted the male bird, which followed me for some time quite close, often hovering over my path in front of me, as though forbidding me to proceed, or demanding the restoration of his offspring. When I tried to scare him off, he flew away, but soon returned, making a great noise, lamenting with plaintive notes, and calling to the object of his solicitude. I put the little one down in a place clear of grass

and shrubs, whereupon the old bird ventured forth from the bushes, and came near enough for me to seize it also. It seemed strange to see nothing of the hen-bird, and I allowed the young one's cries to continue. After some time she appeared, but did not display a tenth part of the interest in their joint offspring shown by the cock-bird.

I afterwards visited the ruins of the ancient Naiabui, where a few mareas had withstood the ravages of time, and are still fit for the reception of guests. From the roofs of the other houses, which were half buried, grow a quantity of grass and plants, all but concealing the outlines of this forsaken village, which is entirely surrounded by cocoa-nut and areca-trees, overshadowing the old ruins with their heavy foliage. Plants formerly cultivated by the natives were still visible, and I observed some fine croton bushes with variegated foliage. The fact of my never having found croton in the forest, but only in cultivated places, makes me think it must have been introduced by the natives. There were besides quantities of wild flowers. Numerous butterflies of all shapes and colours formed the sole population of the old Naiabui. Among the flowers I found a great many small *cetonides*, and never before, since I have taken to collecting insects, have I obtained in one day so many beautiful specimens of this interesting class.

The history of Naiabui is one of blood, and its last page I am reading to-day. My guide tells me that, many years ago, while the men were out hunting, a hostile tribe attacked the village, and

slew the old and infirm men who were left to guard the women; the latter, with the children, were carried off as prisoners. Many of them, who had the courage to endeavour to defend themselves, were barbarously slaughtered. Although the people of Naiabui now seem peaceable, they are nevertheless at war with the tribes of the interior.

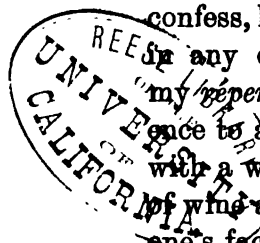
*July 26th.*—The natives, allured by the amount I pay for the animals they bring me, have all made themselves collectors for my sake, and to-day I have been compelled to decline a good many reptiles, on account of having exhausted my store of spirits of wine, and having no other means of preserving them. This country is indeed rich; in a few hours to-day I collected more than a hundred species of *Coleoptera*. Being obliged to go to Roro for alcohol and other supplies, I find myself compelled to leave this place sooner than I expected. The natives promise to furnish me with men to carry my baggage and row my canoe. As they are not so lazy as the men of Mou, and as I am on very good terms with them, I hope to effect much. The women are my great friends, and no longer fear the discharge of fire-arms; I may even fire off my gun in the very middle of the village. They were greatly astonished at my petroleum lamp and candles, and I taught them how to supply lamp-light by using the fat of animals. The thing took amazingly, and I was obliged to manufacture lamps for the head men of the village out of old tin boxes. To keep them in good humour and amuse them, I sang for them in the evening some

airs from Italian operas, and collected the whole population in front of my marea.

My success was immense. I was applauded, and compelled to repeat some of the pieces which pleased them most. The most celebrated of our artists would have envied me at that moment. There is no doubt that the natives love and appreciate music; their attention proves this. The women especially seemed enchanted! I ought to confess, however, that I should not venture to sing in any other country than New Guinea. When my repertoire was exhausted, I treated my audience to another entertainment. Covering myself with a white sheet, I set fire to a mixture of spirits of wine and salt, the light from which made everyone's face look livid. This time they did not ask me to repeat the performance, but were all struck with terror and fled, leaving me at peace to write my journal as usual.

*July 27th.*—I left Naiabui this morning, accompanied by the farewells of the whole population, who repeatedly begged me to return to them. Many of them went as far as Bioto, where I found men with canoes ready to take me to the place where I had left my own canoe. I made them some presents, and the people promised that they would always help me when I needed their assistance. We parted like old friends, promising to meet again. Four men came with me as far as Roro, rowing my canoe.

From the day on which Naimi told me my house would be plundered, I often thought the thing might possibly happen, as I have no confidence in those I had left in charge. When I arrived



this evening, and was landing, Naimi's words recurred to my mind, and I proceeded towards the house in haste. John came out to meet me, weeping, and I asked what was the matter. Naimi's prophecy had turned out only too true; it was an accomplished fact. According to what John told me, the natives had broken into the house at night, and carried off all they could. Fortunately, before leaving, I had secreted the guns in some straw. I find, too, they have left the boxes of cartridges, the dynamite, and some heavy tin cases, which were soldered. I must keep quiet to-night. To-morrow shall be a day of reckoning.

*July 28th.*—A number of natives from Mou, and with them Matciu, Nabao, and Imoana, came to-day. With consummate hypocrisy they pretended to be grieved at the robbery of which I was the victim, and said the thieves were Roro men. I replied, that I cared little to know who the thieves were, but was bent on exacting a restitution of the whole of the stolen property; that I granted twenty-four hours' grace, and if it was not restored within that time, I would fire at every one who came within range of my gun. Thus saying, I dismissed them. Naimi came later, and I dismissed him with the same threats. I really am determined to recover my lost possessions, and I have made preparations to-day for a desperate defence, should the natives, having carried off my property, plan to kill me. I have invariably acted with justice and kindness towards them, and I have not deserved this treatment at their hands. In the meantime, I have put all my guns into good



order, loaded some Orsini shells, and mined the paths leading to the house, so that with a long match I can blow them up without going out or exposing myself.

*July 29th.*—This morning, before dawn, I went to see whether by any chance the natives had brought back the stolen property and left it before the house; but they had not done so. I therefore took a tin case which had contained petroleum, and loaded it with five dynamite cartridges, of about two ounces each, and, closing it tightly, I carried it to a safe distance from the house and fired it. The detonation which followed was like the roar of a cannonade, and the echoes resounded for several seconds. I then let off rockets in the direction of the natives' houses, and illuminated my own house with Bengal fire; I also fired some dozen shots from my gun. My own people, who knew nothing of all this, were quite as much terrified as the natives. Some ran into the house to recover themselves, others fled, and did not return until the evening, and John has fever from fright.

When day broke, about 6 a.m., I saw Naimi, followed by his five comrades, coming up the path, bringing some of the stolen goods, such as linen sheets, counterpanes, and sundry articles of clothing. Naimi asked my leave to come close, and I made him a sign to approach without fear; I hauled down the black flag I had hoisted, and substituted the flag of Italy in token of peace, as I had told the natives yesterday, that, if they saw the black flag flying over my house, they were not to approach under pain of being fired at. I went out to await them in front of the

house, and when they had come within ten paces, I told them to lay down what they had brought. It would be hard to describe the panic that possessed them. They trembled like half-drowned dogs, and Naimi could not articulate a word. I told him they must restore the rest of the things during the day; and this he promised should be done; he said all the women had fled the island.

All the natives that came to-day belong to Mou, not to Roro.

Imoana confessed to being the culprit, and fled when I wanted to confront him with a woman, who had told me she recognized him as one of the thieves. I repeated to Naimi that, if they wished to live in harmony and peace with me, they must restore all they had taken, or I should continue hostilities against them; above all, I impressed upon them that, if they saw the black flag flying, none of them must approach my house under penalty of death.

Before leaving me, Naimi promised that all should be brought back in the course of the day, and I explained to him that, if this were done, I should start for Naiabui to-morrow. He asked me whether I was not afraid the natives would return to rob me, and kill the people I left behind to guard the house. I answered that I was not afraid, as if they did so I would cause the death of all the women, and children, and chiefs of the village to which the thieves belonged.

*July 30th.*—This morning, the natives of Naiabui, who had accompanied me here, came to me; it had been understood that I was to return to their village with them, but I told them that, under the circumstances, I must remain to enforce the resti-

tution of my stolen goods. They explained that they had exhausted their provisions, and, being friends of mine, they could not obtain any from the people of Mou and Roro, so that their return was a matter of necessity; they also asked me to lend them the canoe. I consented, on condition that they should take Arnold and five of my men with them to make collections for me at Naiabui. They agreed, and I sent Arnold off, well provided with spirits of wine, and cartridges, and also some beads, which the natives had not stolen, so that he might buy insects from the natives of Naiabui.

In order to impress on Naimi and the rest that I meant to keep my word—that is, to kill every native who passed in sight of my house, although in reality I meant them no ill—I fired at Naimi himself to-day, as he was passing at a distance of three hundred yards. I aimed so that he might hear the whiz of the bullet without its hurting him. There can be no doubt he did hear, judging from the way he scuttled off.

My house is in a good strategical position; from my window I command the road which leads to the plantations, and that by which the canoes have to go to the fishing-grounds and return to their villages on the mainland. I might fancy myself in a fortress in a state of siege. The natives have disturbed the good relations that existed between us, and, should it cost me my life, I will not give in to them. I hope, ultimately, to be able to dictate the terms of peace, and those shall be severe enough. I believe that, if I am not resolute with them, one day they will steal the very soles off my boots.

## CHAPTER VII.

I go through sundry performances for the admonition and edification of the Natives—Return of my men from Naiabui—Insect-collecting—Naimi and Ocona—A great flight of *Pteropus*—A torment of the Inferno which Dante omitted—Confidence of the Natives—They go on a kangaroo-hunting expedition, and leave me in charge of the village and the women—"When the cat is away the mice may play"—The "Chevert"—*Carpophaga Müllerii*—Important additions to my collections—A gala day at Bioto.

*July 31st.*—This morning, three people in a canoe passed about a hundred and fifty yards from my house, and, while so doing, they shaved a small rock, on which I had erected a little target to practise at; I promptly fired at the rock, and my aim was as good as I could wish. The natives were terror-stricken; rowing with all their might they turned the point, and went on shore, endeavouring to make for the plantations inland. I, however, fired some shots at the path they were taking, and forced them to retreat, whereupon they re-embarked and rowed to the opposite coast.

At eleven o'clock, Naimi, Irupi, and Parama arrived, bearing aloft one of the stolen flags, and asked leave to approach the house. I made signs to them to come, but Naimi asked me first

to haul down the black flag. I satisfied him by hoisting the Italian tricolor. They then drew near, and delivered up five complete suits of clothes, and other of the stolen articles, such as axes, beads, and knives.

The better to impress on their minds what they had to fear from me, I treated them to a few diversions. I first planted three rifle-bullets in the trunk of a small tree at a distance of over a hundred yards; next I exploded an Orsini shell; and lastly, after having persuaded them to try their spears against a strong piece of zinc, which blunted them, I riddled it with large shot from my fowling-piece.

Having thus astonished my three visitors, who were seated on a large stone in front of my house, I took them a short distance from it, and, re-entering the house myself, I lighted a match communicating with a mine under the stone on which they had been sitting; and then ran to them, and signed to them to observe it closely. They did not understand what I wanted them to look at, and were trying intently to discover what it might be, when the mine exploded. It is needless to describe their terror; their limbs, far from enabling them to fly, could hardly support them, and they were barely able to implore me to have pity on them, promising to restore everything. When their fears had somewhat abated, I took them to see the effect of the mine. The stone had vanished, and its place was occupied by a hole. The mine had been charged with dynamite, and the rock, which was of coral formation, and therefore light, was shattered into a thousand pieces,

which had been driven to a great distance. Finding nothing but a great hole, instead of the rock on which they had been sitting, they looked at one another trembling, and, turning to me, again adjured me not to destroy them, adding that they had arranged to restore everything. Naimi, on his departure, asked me to allow him to take with him the piece of zinc, or rather corrugated iron, perforated by my shot, that he might show it his people, and so frighten them into restoring my property. As they descended the hill they picked up some fragments of the stone which had been blown into the air by the explosion of the mine.

In the afternoon, I had an opportunity of displaying the long range of my rifle, by firing at a canoe out at sea, in which, by the aid of a telescope, I had discovered Matciu and Imoana. The ball skimmed along the water, making a slight splash in front of the canoe, and ricochetting two or three times. I could judge of the terror of the occupants, from seeing them first squatting down in the canoe, and then rowing with all their strength in a headlong flight.

*August 1st.*—The natives did not show themselves, so hostilities still continue. Two canoes, a long way out at sea, passed, but, after I had fired six shots across the bows, the men in them made up their minds to retreat.

*August 2nd.*—The men I sent to Naiabui returned to-day. Arnold had been well received, and installed in my marea—so my men tell me.

Only one canoe appeared to-day; the natives asked leave to land, as they had some insects

for me. I asked whether they had brought back any of my stolen property, and, hearing they had not, I refused to allow them to come on shore, and they were forced to go.

*August 3rd.*—I have not seen a living soul, but passed the day in collecting insects, and may say I am well content with the results of my labour. My people will not go into the forest; they pretend to be in terror of the natives, but in reality they enjoy this state of things immensely, as it allows them to sleep all day and smoke all night.

*August 4th, 5th, and 6th.*—The natives do not show themselves. I sent the canoe with John and four other men to Bioto, to carry some fresh provisions to Arnold.

*August 8th.*—My men have not returned, as I ordered them to do; and I can only hope no mischance has befallen them. Naimi and Ocona came in the afternoon, and I allowed them to approach the house, on which I hoisted the tricolor. They assured me all should be restored in a few days, and explained that, owing to persons belonging to several different villages having taken part in the theft, it was difficult to recover all the stolen articles, especially as some of the delinquents lived at a considerable distance. They told me one of Warupi's wives has just died, and is to be buried to-morrow, and therefore they will not be able to return until the day after.

*August 9th.*—Several canoes attempted to pass to-day, but I stopped them, as usual.

My snake, after four months of entire abstinence from food, made up his mind to devour two rats out of six which I had put into his box.

I observed to-day that the termites had reconstructed one of their habitations destroyed by me the day before yesterday. Termites are not very abundant here, and their dwellings or nests are never higher than about twenty inches.

*August 10th.*—Towards mid-day, to my great pleasure, my canoe returned from Bioto. John has been to Naiabui, where Arnold is getting on capitally, and is very well treated by the natives. They brought me some insects, and John informed me, on the part of the head man of the place, that he wished me to leave the island of Roro, and to establish myself in their village.

The specimens brought in by the natives confirm me in my first opinion that this country is very rich in insects.

*August 11th.*—A canoe passed with a number of persons on board; the head man shouted out to me, "Maiba! Maiba! we belong to Maiba, and are your friends." I replied, "My friends have nothing to fear;" on which they passed by, shouting and repeating, "Maiba friends, Maiba friends!" The passage of the *Pteropus* has been going on for some evenings past; they fly to the east, and return westward the first thing in the morning, in such numbers that no one who had not seen them could believe in the multitude of them.

*August 12th.*—The time is beginning to drag very heavily, and I am getting tired of this state of things, seeing day after day, which I might employ so usefully, pass by unprofitably. I hope, however, my position will soon undergo a change, for Nabao and the rest appeared to-day, bringing many of the stolen articles, and asking that the



black flag might be lowered. I hoisted the tri-color, and they drew near and handed over to me all that was missing, except a few small articles, which they promise to bring to-morrow. I on my part have announced my intention of making peace with them as soon as they did so, and immediately starting for Naiabui.

*August 13th.*—Nabao brought me to-day all the things except a flag, two shirts, and some other small articles of clothing, which he said had been carried off by people who live on the coast more than two days' journey from this place, and who happened by chance to be in the island on the night on which my house was robbed. Whether this be true or not it suits me to appear to believe it, and to re-establish good relations with the natives. I told Nabao that I should depart for Naiabui to-morrow, and that I am leaving only John, two sick men, and a woman, to take charge of the house, and that I felt persuaded the natives would respect my people and my property. I added that they must not venture to approach the house within certain limits, for that there are mines laid in every direction, and John knows how, if he should feel apprehensive, to blow them up, and hundreds of natives with them.

It seems they fear the mines more than the guns, for to-day, as long as they remained near the house, and when going away, they kept looking at their feet, apparently afraid of being blown into the air at any moment, like the stone on which Naimi and his companions had been sitting, and which they must have been told about

*August 14th.*—I started in my canoe for Bioto this morning at ten o'clock, with three of my men. At the mouth of the Nicura I found Nabao, who told me he was bound for Naiabui. What business can he have there? Is he going to stir up the natives against me?

Being unable to enter the mouth of the river at low-tide, we were obliged to wait for the flood-tide, and then all set off in company. We talked over the events of the last few days, which he told me had displeased him very much; the theft, he said, had been committed by a band of thoughtless young men, and he assured me nothing of the kind should occur again.

When we had arrived at that point of the Bioto beyond which my canoe cannot pass, I was forced to halt and fire some shots, as had been agreed on, to summon the natives to my assistance. Only one small canoe having arrived, I was compelled to wait until to-morrow morning, and to pass the night in my own canoe.

*August 15th.*—After a most uncomfortable night, I joyfully hailed the first rays of the sun filtering through the dense foliage. A cold bath somewhat restored my strength, and the martyrdom which mosquitoes inflict all night long on the unfortunate traveller came to an end. One may pass the night in a small canoe on a little river, but sleep is impossible; such a night is terrible, and one can only contemplate it with horror. The cries of strange animals, the danger from crocodiles, perhaps from natives also, the fantastic appearance everything assumes, the fluttering of myriads of *Pteropus*, passing overhead like ghosts,

the very murmuring of the stream, all combine to make of the place a small Inferno. If Dante had ever passed a night like mine on the Bioto, he would certainly have added all I went through to the torments of his Hell.

With the first rays of the sun came three canoes, and in them myself and my possessions were transferred to Bioto. I found several young men ready to carry my baggage to Naiabui, but they demanded payment in advance, which I decidedly refused, offering to pay them on arriving there. After some discussion they accepted my terms, and we set out. We arrived at Naiabui at noon, and I met with a most gratifying reception from the inhabitants.

Arnold was absent, and I was told he had gone out kangaroo-hunting in the mountains with several of the natives. I found he had left all the boxes in the marea unfastened, but the natives do not appear to have laid a finger on anything. Ateate, the head man, pointed out this fact to me with considerable complacency, adding that there are no thieves in his village, and I may leave all my boxes open during my absence with safety.

Many people from Mou were here when I arrived, among them Matciu; but I cannot find out why they have come. They disappeared soon after my arrival.

In the afternoon the two head men came and told me they and their men were going to hunt kangaroos, but the women were to stay behind in the village, and they asked me to watch over both the women and the village. They are, in

fact, gone, and now only myself and two or three infirm old men and the women remain. Hardly had the men gone when my house was invaded by the women, who spent the evening with me, laughing, joking, and singing.

I cannot but think the conduct of the natives very strange in leaving the custody of their wives and village to me. The presence of the people from Mou, Arnold's absence, and the unusual familiarity of the women, made me suspect some plot under this appearance of friendly confidence.

*August 17th.*—The last two days have passed quietly enough; I have worked hard at collecting insects, which are abundant, and of very interesting species.

The natives have not returned from hunting, but Arnold has sent me a kangaroo's skin.

About mid-day I heard some women screaming, and thought it my duty, as their protector, to go and see what was the matter. I found they were terrified at the sight of a huge black snake which was trailing along the ground beneath their house. I recognized it at once as belonging to a most venomous species, and with great precaution I took measures to kill it, but without destroying the skin. The women were afraid on my account, and did not wish me to go near it, imploring me to shoot it with my gun. When I was close to the brute it tried to escape, without showing its teeth, and I managed to kill it with a stick.

When I brought the dead snake into the house, all the women fled. A little vitality was still left in it; it was able to grip furiously a pair of

pincers which I put into its mouth. Two large amber-coloured drops of poison fell from its fangs.

*August 19th.*—The men, Arnold with them, returned to-day from hunting. Arnold had used up all the cartridges I had in shooting kangaroos and cockatoos for the natives, who wear cockatoos' feathers as ornaments, and prize them highly.

Leaving my people at the village, I started with eight of the natives for Roro. I had decided to go there in consequence of a rumour which had reached me of the arrival of a large English ship at Yule Island, and also because I had been told the people of Roro had killed John and the others whom I had left behind, and burned my house.

I arrived at the island after nightfall, and was relieved to find my house just as I had left it. John came to meet me, and told me the English ship was at anchor in the bay. The phosphorescence of the water was quite extraordinary to-day, every stroke of the oars seemed to raise a wave of silver. Going into a creek where the water was perfectly smooth, I saw a number of luminous particles floating on the surface. Their track was marked by streaks of light. I stopped the canoe to observe them better, and saw that they were swimming about in different directions, and that two often chased one another, or met. I remarked that the moment they came in contact, the phosphorescent light around the two mysterious beings was greatly augmented; and when one pursued the other, four long streaks of light appeared serpentine on the

water in a most curious manner, like comets or shooting stars. I put some of these into an earthenware vessel, and its sides appeared to be immediately illuminated with particles of phosphorus. I took up some in my hand, and, in order to do so, had to dip my arm into the water; when I withdrew it, both the hand and arm seemed lighted up as if by magic. These strange beings were so minute that I could not feel them between my fingers. I have never seen a similar phenomenon in any of my sea voyages.

*August 23rd.*—The ship that has arrived here is the "Chevert" of Sydney. I was cordially received on board by Mr. W. Macleay, the head of the expedition, and by Captain Onslow, R.N.

I am surprised to see an expedition so well fitted out, and provided with every requisite; and when I compare my scanty means with the luxuries they enjoy on board ship, and their safety (owing to the number of men they have on board), with my poor house, little canoe, and few companions, I almost regret their arrival. It seems to me that they can perform in five days what I could not do in five months; and I cannot be expected to be pleased to see them working in the field which I have prepared at the risk of my life. All things, however, have their bright side, and I expect to derive some benefit from the arrival of the ship, by giving the natives to understand that it is I who have caused it to come here, to punish them for having robbed me.

*August 24th.*—This morning a number of canoes surrounded the "Chevert," and I saw Mr. Macleay paying the natives three or four times as much as

I usually pay them. Of course, when he goes away, the natives will demand heavy prices from me also.

I should have liked Mr. Macleay to show a little severity towards the natives, in order to make them believe the fables I have told them about the coming of the great ship; but it is Mr. Macleay's interest not to second me, and therefore he treats them with great kindness.

On leaving the ship, I was followed to the beach by some canoes; and when I landed, some of the people from Rapa wanted to come with me to the house; but as two among them had been accomplices in the robbery, I forbade them to approach, and ordered them to remain on the beach. One of them insolently answered that he was not afraid of me, and meant to come. He made an attempt to pass me, but I grasped him by the arm and pushed him off the path, on which he ran to his canoe, and, seizing a spear, raised it to strike me. I had no gun with me, but I promptly presented my revolver at him. The women were terrified, and the other men took the spear from him, and, carrying him by force to his canoe, went off.

*August 25th.*—This morning the tricolor was flying over my house, and several natives, whom I received amicably, came to visit me. They brought me some young kangaroos, belonging to a hitherto unknown species of the *Macropus* (*Macropus Papuanus* sp. nov.).

*August 26th.*—A number of young men from Rapa approached my boundaries this morning, although the black flag was flying. John chal-

lenged them, and told them to be off. They replied with insulting gestures and words. I appeared at the window and repeated the order, upon which they insulted me. I then fired at them, and, judging from the way in which they fled, I fancy some of them were peppered.

*August 28th.*—To-day I went to the mainland to shoot, and I was very fortunate, for I shot a magnificent hawk while he was fighting with a *cuscus*. I also shot the latter, besides two gowras, and a *Dorcopsis*. I also found the *Carpophaga Mullerii*, which I had not previously seen in this part of New Guinea.

*August 30th.*—The rain has been incessant for the last four days. Mr. Macleay seems inclined to depart to-morrow, and to-day has sent out his people, not to shoot, but to ascertain the route by which he ought to leave the bay. The ship's doctor, Mr. James, a young American of pleasant manners, came on shore, and, like the others, told me Mr. Macleay is tired of his voyage, and his companions are still more so. It appears they still purpose to visit Redscar Bay, and then to return to Somerset and Sydney. I have reason to believe that, notwithstanding the great preparations made for his expedition and the large number of men he has on board, Mr. Macleay has done very little.

*August 31st.*—A sailor belonging to the "Chevert," who took me on shore to-day, told me that once, while he was on shore in New Guinea, guarding a boat, two canoes with natives on board came up, that he first pretended to be asleep, and when they came nearer, he fired his revolver at



them, on which they fled precipitately. I asked him why he had fired at the natives, and he replied, "Just for fun!" Macleay certainly does not know of this, but it is a specimen of the things that are done which irritate the natives.

*September 2nd.*—Early this morning I perceived, with real pleasure, that the "Chevert" was weighing anchor; I much prefer to be alone here. In order to convey to the natives an idea of what cannon are like, Mr. Macleay fired a salute of two guns: I replied by exploding a tin box containing several ounces of dynamite, which made more noise than the guns.

The "Chevert" had not been long gone before she returned to her anchorage, but for what reason I do not know.

When I first arrived on this island, a large and beautiful butterfly, a species of *ornithoptera*, was common; it afterwards disappeared for some months, and now again it abounds.

*September 3rd.*—At last the "Chevert" is off, and I hope to be able to return to Naiabui to-morrow.

*September 4th.*—To-day, the third anniversary of my departure from Mount Arfak, I returned to Naiabui. Fortune favoured me, and, finding a canoe on the Bioto, I pursued my journey to the village without delay. I did not land at the same pier as on former occasions, but at another village, also called Bioto, a mile and a half higher up the stream. I was accommodated in a marea, and well received by both the head men and others. They invited me to sing, while they accompanied me with the beating of the drums. It was a most infernal concert! I concluded the evening's enter-

tainment by burning Bengal fire in the middle of the village ; but although I told the women they need not be afraid, I had hardly lighted up when they all fled, and went to sleep in another village.

I saw numbers of *Parra gallinacea* to-day, on the leaves of the nymphæa (water-lily), and to see them scampering on the top of the water, treading with their long claws on the great leaves, one would suppose the plant had been made purposely for them.

The natives tell me small canoes can go several miles higher up this river into the interior, as far as the mountains. I augur, from the abundance of aquatic birds, that there are, not far off, extensive lagoons or marshes. I remarked that the natives bury their dead in front of their houses, and surround the graves with a little palisade to keep off dogs and pigs.

*September 5th.*—After a bad night and a scanty breakfast, I set forth for Naiabui, accompanied by thirty young men, some of whom carried my baggage.

I met Arnold on the road. Alarmed by my long absence, he was returning to Roro with some of the Naiabui men. I find he has had two bad attacks of fever. He turned back with me. The marea, which I had previously occupied, was placed at my disposal, and I can now look on it as my own property. I found the natives all freshly adorned and painted; the houses had new verandahs, covered in with little roofs and ornamented in a thousand ways. Everything betokened a festival, and Arnold told me a great ball had been given in honour of the people of Bioto. A dinner had

also been given on the occasion of a massacre of kangaroos. The people of Bioto will shortly give a return dinner and ball to the people of Naiabui.

There was an alarm in the country to-day, and a conflagration was apprehended, for the natives could not keep the flames within the limits of a tract of land covered with long grass. The women carried all their possessions into the middle of the village, while the men were employed in putting out the fire. Luckily, they were successful, and there was nothing to lament except the terror of the women and children.

*September 9th.*—During the last few days I have greatly added to my entomological collections; and by the aid of the natives I have also done very well with regard to reptiles. I not only obtain insects from the inhabitants of this place, but also from those of distant villages, who come to satisfy their curiosity by looking at a white man, as well as to obtain beads and knives. Last evening there were sundry demonstrations of ill-humour on the part of the natives of Naiabui, because I gave a quantity of red beads to some people who did not belong to the village. At night the head men made the usual speeches from their verandahs, asserting that, being in their village, I had no right to buy from strangers.

For some time I pretended to be asleep and not to hear them, and then I too discoursed, but in rather a different tone.

This morning I pretended to be furious, and ordered my baggage to be got ready, feigning an intention to depart. Seeing this, one of the head

men came, and promised that if I would remain I should have no more trouble, but should be allowed to purchase whatever I chose. He also promised to take me where I should find birds of paradise. The others came with similar promises. At last I consented to remain, but declared, if they annoyed me any more in this way, I would at once go away. The boys engaged to-day in a curious sham fight. They were all adorned with feathers and leaves. In place of spears, they carried light reeds, which they used with extraordinary agility.

*September 12th.*—I learnt from the natives that shocks of earthquakes are sometimes felt here; they call these phenomena “Au-ahu.” Although they have meat in abundance, these people also eat large grasshoppers, and coleoptera, which they slightly warm at the fire.

I found to-day a kingfisher's (*Sima torotoro*) nest, with three round white eggs in it, in the trunk of a tree.

The men went out hunting again, begging me to watch over the women. They had hardly gone, when the women invaded my marea, and set up a regular rejoicing, seemingly well pleased at being rid of the men. All, however, ran away when a man, who came in from the fields, told them Aiu, one of the old men, was about to return.

*September 13th.*—I went to-day in company with a few natives, to some mountains at no great distance from Naiabui, and now I am lodged in a small deserted village, which is evidently inhabited only when the natives come here on hunting excursions.

*September 14th.*—I was up and about early this morning, for I was impatient to explore the mountains and not able to sleep. I did not obtain any of the birds I expected, but small pigeons (*Ptilonopus*) abounded, and also a species of pigeon called by naturalists *Henicophaps albifrons*. I also found two new species, a *melifagide* and a small species of parrot (*Cyclopsittacus suavis-simus*). I found in an ant's nest, affixed to a tree, about ten feet from the ground, the nest of the *Psittenteles subplacens*, which is also a small species of parrot. I shot the male bird as he was entering the nest for the third or fourth time, and brought away two white eggs. Although I heard the note of the *Paradisaea Raggiana*, I could not secure a single specimen. There were many other kinds of birds, but of ordinary species, and not worth noting.

I did not find many insects.

*September 15th.*—After a hurried breakfast, we bade farewell to the deserted village of Puroh, for so it is called by the natives. The clouds prevented me from seeing Mount Kobio (Yule). Making our way to the west, we descended some hills of sandstone formation. Here and there I found pieces of quartz. I also saw a kind of clay used by the natives in the manufacture of pottery.

Before reaching home I obtained a few good birds. On my arrival at Naiabui, I found Arnold down with fever.

*September 17th.*—Being wearied out with the fatigue of the last few days, I stayed at home. The time was, however, not lost, for a number

of natives came to see me, and from them I obtained a large number of insects, especially *carabids*, *longicorns*, and *cetonides*.

I was present at a conjugal dispute to-day : a man, who wanted to impose silence on his wife, while she would not listen to him, at last took a stick and pretended to belabour her, when she thought better of it and held her tongue. Observe that he did not actually beat her !

This morning a boy died in a house by the side of my marea. The parents' cries and lamentations were heartrending. From time to time, the mother sang, interspersing the cry, "Come, come," with the notes of her song. At four in the afternoon, a grave about three feet deep was dug in front of the house, in which the mortal remains of the child were laid, wrapped up in tupuna cloth. The weeping mother, exclaiming, "Come, come," threw the first handful of earth upon the corpse. As soon as the grave was filled up, the poor mother, and shortly afterwards the father, prostrated themselves on it, and lay there moaning until the evening. A fire is now burning on the grave, and the father and mother are still lamenting in subdued tones, and repeating the mournful measures of their funeral dirges. Can these people be called savages ?

*September 18th.*—My health is anything but good, my limbs are beginning to swell, and I have many other symptoms of fever.

The natives have brought me some very fine insects, my own people hardly any at all. I have just found out that they hand over the insects they do find to the natives, in order that I may

be obliged to pay for them. The conduct of the women makes me suspect that Naimi's prophecy concerning them will one day prove true, for the good-looking bachelors of the village pay attentions to them, which are by no means unwillingly received.

Ah, that mother! All last night, and throughout this day, she has lain prostrate on her son's grave, weeping and calling on him by name to come back.

*September 19th.*—I received to-day from the natives a female snake of the same species as the one I have alive at Roro. They found her incubating her eggs, nine in number; they are elongated in shape, and have not a calcareous shell, but a very strong skin instead; they are all connected, and irregular in form. The natives had fastened the snake to a stick, from which I soon released her. She did not try to bite me, and when I put her into a box with her eggs, she placed herself over them, and seems to want to continue the incubation. Two little snakes, not yet fully matured, came out of two of the eggs which I broke.

*September 20th.*—I have again found a *Dactylopsila*, which I dissected, and discovered that its food consists of ants and small coleoptera. I think the opinion that this animal is frugiverous is erroneous. Its long tongue and certain glands, secreting viscous matter, make me believe, on the contrary, that the animal is essentially insectivorous. This is the second of the species in whose stomach and intestines I have found the remains of insects only.

Several of the men and women are departing for Bioto, where a grand dinner is awaiting them. It is a gala day, and many hours were devoted to the cares of the toilet in anticipation of to-day. The natives rubbed their bodies with oil, and painted them with many colours, adorning themselves magnificently with feathers, shells, and the teeth of dogs and crocodiles.

A grand ball was also to have taken place, but, owing to the death of two or three children within the last few days, it has been postponed for three weeks. I have been invited to attend it.

The snake continues to hatch her eggs, with the exception of one, which she pushed out of the circle.

*September 21st.*—I again obtained a quantity of fine insects from the natives to-day, although I have already had them brought in by hundreds. Amongst them I found some beautiful and interesting specimens, one was a magnificent *Schirzorhina* and two were new *Lomaptera*.

Among birds, I find a new species of ground pigeon, of a bronze colour, with coppery reflections, and white neck and throat (*Chalcophaps Margaritæ*).

Yesterday evening, when the natives returned from Bioto, they brought fish, which they had received as a gift, and which they ate in the marea in front of mine.

They made an infernal uproar, and at last two women began to quarrel; their dispute went to such lengths that the husband of the combatants grew tired of it, and, coming down from the



marea, gave one of them a smart blow on the back. What somewhat surprised me was that he used a brand of wood snatched from the fire. Order being thus restored, supper went on, amidst the laughter and jokes of the people assembled.

## CHAPTER VIII.

At Bioto again—My health becomes unsatisfactory—My tame snakes—My dog dies—I become very despondent—Abia—A touch of romance—Oona arrives—A hurricane and its results—A reconciliation with Naimi—The death of Mr. Applin—Arrival of the Missionary steamer—A fine snake—I announce my intended departure—Grief of the Naiabui people—Wives—A clever spider—"Tater"—Travellers' tales—A sad parting—Friendliness of the queen.

*September 22nd.*—The time for the return of the "Ellangowan" having arrived, I determined to go back to Roro; and having got my baggage ready, I asked Ateate for men to carry it to Bioto. He replied that, as I had insulted him by sending him away from the marea (which I had done once because he bothered me), he would not give me a man. I told him I would send to Bioto to ask for men, and this threat made him give me as many men as I required.

When I arrived at Bioto, the natives took me to a lagoon, where I found an extraordinary number of waterfowls, among them *Porphyrius*, and *Parras*, water-rails, and ducks. In a couple of hours I killed such a number that I was forced to desist, because the canoe would hold no more.

Leaving Bioto at 4 p.m., I arrived at Roro very

late; but, thank Heaven, I found my people all well, and they had not been molested in any way by the natives. The two kangaroos which I had left in John's care are dead, and a small Newfoundland dog is so emaciated that I fear I shall lose him also.

*September 28th.*—To-day Aju came from Naiabui, to tell me the people of Mou, Rapa, and Roro have made a plot to kill me, and he begged me to go with him to Naiabui. I answered that I did not fear the natives, were they twenty or a hundred, and I treated him to an explosion of one of the mines near the house. This appeared to convince him that I am well able to defend myself.

*September 30th.*—I have put all my collections in order within the last few days, and have no reason to be discontented with them, seeing that I have brought away from Naiabui twenty thousand coleoptera, seven hundred reptiles, and a great number of fish, mammalia, and birds. I should now like to see the "Ellangowan" arrive, in order that I may be able to place all these things, which have been obtained at the price of so much fatigue and danger, in safety.

*October 1st.*—The month begins well! This morning I find that the women and the rest of my men have disappeared—whither I do not know, for certainly they cannot go far in the canoe. Naimi, it seems, was a true prophet. Here I am, alone with John and Arnold. The absentees cannot have gone far, and I shall not trouble myself to take possession of their belongings. They have left all they possess—some articles of clothing, knives, &c.—in their houses. My position

is secured from danger; rather than compromised, for if they want the women who were in my service they probably have them now, and will leave me in peace. At any rate I shall not have to fear a repetition of those nocturnal visits, which John tells me were frequent.

The "Ellangowan," being now overdue, cannot be much longer in coming, and when she does come, I shall, perhaps, be able to go to Port Moresby.

Owing to the flight or departure of my people, my position towards the natives remains the same—that is, a state of open hostility, which will continue until they have restored everything. My health is not very good, but I have not actual fever. I am, however, tormented by the swelling of my legs.

Following the advice of a Dutchman, Doctor Stödke—"When you do not know what to take, always take quinine,"—I frequently take large doses of that invaluable medicine.

*October 6th.*—Arnold and I passed the day in shooting and preparing the skins of our birds. John is nearly always ill, though not to such an extent as to be unable to cook our dinner. I really never passed such a quiet time as this. The natives never show themselves, and I forced two canoes to turn back which tried to pass.

My snake has once more changed its skin, and is improving in beauty, and becoming tamer and tamer. I have given him as a companion the female snake I brought from Naiabui. After the journey, she left off hatching the eggs.

*October 11th.*—This is the day fixed for the ball

at Bioto, but Aju has not appeared to take me with him, as he promised.

I saw some natives in the wood over against my house, who seemed to me to be hunting the wild pigs which are found in the island. I had no wish to molest them, so I hoisted the flag of truce.

John and Arnold were then out, drawing water, and they met Matciu, who made a sign to them to pass, but did not speak.

The female snake has changed her skin; the male has eaten a rat, but she, up to the present time, refuses to feed. I found the larvæ of a *longicornus* in the trunk of a tree. They were covered with a calcareous secretion, not easy to break, owing to its strength and hardness.

October 12th.—I am decidedly not lucky, for during the night I lost both my snakes—I may say my friends, for I loved them and they loved me, and we had passed a long time together. Only yesterday, seeing them looking so handsome, I was wondering whether they would ever arrive safely in Europe. Only last night I set traps to catch rats for them; but this morning, when I took them the prey caught at night, I found their box deserted, and nothing in it but the rat which the male snake had swallowed yesterday, but had vomited with such difficulty that he had lost two teeth—which I found on the rat's body—in the process.

October 14th.—I have been in very low spirits all day, owing to the death of my Newfoundland dog. The poor animal breathed its last after great suffering from slow poison produced by corrosive sublimate. Although it was not in my

power to save him, and I knew death was a relief, still his loss affects me much. A void is forming itself around me; my kangaroo dies, my dog dies, my snakes desert me, and now I am alone. My health is feeble, John and Arnold are far from well, MacFarlane does not arrive, and none of my friends of Bioto or Naiabui come to see me. Here is a complication sufficient to excuse a fit of depression. No, my life is certainly not *couleur de rose*.

October 19th.—We have all been more or less out of health, the last few days, but at present we are recovering. The natives do not appear. To-day something worthy of note happened. While I was at work, John came to say that a woman wanted to speak to me. I asked him where she was, and whether he knew her. He said that he did not, and that she was concealed behind some trees not far from the house. This was strange, because the black flag was flying—that flag which is so dreaded by the natives, that they not only do not dare to come to the house, but fear even to approach the limits assigned to me.

I went out, but, dreading an ambuscade, I took my revolver. I was not a little astonished to see Abia, a Bioto girl, asking by signs whether she might come to me. I signed to her to approach and fear nothing. She looked cautiously all round, and then, running up to me, dragged me by one hand into the house, evidently dreading to be observed. Such was her emotion that she could barely speak, and I, while endeavouring to reassure her, wondered what it could mean.

Abia is the daughter of Urea, an inhabitant of Bioto; she is a pretty girl, of sixteen or seventeen years old. On several occasions, at Bioto, she had shown herself very well disposed towards me, and I had given her handsomer presents than the others; and perhaps, when shaking hands with them all, I had pressed her hand with rather more warmth. Perhaps, also, when I had met her in the plantations, I had replied to her kindly smiles by kissing my hand to her. My eyes, too, had told her that hers were the most beautiful eyes in Bioto, and that her form was more perfect than that of any of her companions. On the last occasion of my leaving Naiabui, just as I was starting from Bioto in my canoe, not having seen her when I embarked, I asked where she was, and was told she was absent. I had not bestowed another thought on her. We were already two miles from the village, when, hearing voices behind us, I turned round and saw some people in a canoe coming down the river and making signs to me to stop. When they came up, I understood that Urea had been unwilling that I should quit Bioto without his wishing me good-bye, and he had therefore come to salute me before I reached the Nicura river. With Urea was his daughter Abia. What could be the motive of her present visit?

When the poor girl was able to speak, she told me the men of Rapa and of another village had determined to kill me, that they were coming unarmed to bring me insects and other things, so as not to excite my suspicions; but if I allowed them to approach me, they would attack me

from behind, and seize me. She added, I must tell no one that she had come to me, for if she were to be discovered, they would kill her.

I told her not to fear on my account, and showed her the mines, which I could explode from my house; I also showed my revolver, guns, and bombshells—in fact, the whole of my arsenal. This appeared to reassure her somewhat, although she could not help betraying her dread of the weapons. Perhaps it is not the men of Rapa, but her own people who are plotting against my life, and she fears, that in defending myself, I may harm some of those dear to her!

I wanted to give her a small gold chain which I wear round my neck, but she refused it, saying it would betray to her own people that she had come to see me. I was, in short, able to do nothing to show my gratitude towards her, beyond giving her a fervent kiss; on which she fled.

Poor Abia! shall I ever see you again?

*October 20th.*—Ocona passed in a canoe, while I was on the beach; I made him stop, and spoke to him, asking why none of the people showed themselves? He said they were afraid, adding that they were unable to restore me the few articles still missing, because they had been stolen, as Nabao told me long since, by people who live at a great distance. I told him to tell Naimi to come and see me to-morrow, and we would make friends; and he promised me that he would return to-morrow with Naimi.

*October 22nd.*—To-day, while I was away from the house, I perceived that a hurricane was coming



on. I went quickly back to my house, and found that the wind had partly demolished the roof, and water was coming in everywhere in torrents. John and Arnold had not, however, been awakened by it; they were still sleeping soundly.

It is now a month since I returned from Naiabui, expecting to find the "Ellangowan" here on my arrival.

*October 23rd.*—Ocona, bringing some beautiful insects, was sent forward by Naimi as a messenger of peace. I asked him why Naimi had not come up with him, and he replied, as usual, that he was afraid. I called Naimi, and told him to come fearlessly, which he did. I grasped his hand in token of friendship, according to our custom before the outbreak of hostilities. He made some excuses, throwing all the blame on the people of Roro. Shortly afterwards, five or six other natives, companions of Naimi, who had remained in the background, approached, and stood silent and timid. After giving them a short lecture, I shook hands with them also. In a few minutes, three other canoes, with both men and women on board, who had evidently been hanging back to see how the embassy of Ocona and Naimi turned out, appeared. They asked me to grant them permission to live in the houses on the beach which they had occupied when I first arrived here, and which they had abandoned "for three moons," as Naimi said, "from the fear they have of the white magician of the mountain." I told them they might go there, and that they had nothing to fear from me, so long as they behaved properly and respected me and

my house. Naimi told me that I should have no more trouble with them, and added that his wife should come to-morrow, in token of peace; she, by the bye, is the queen—Puro by name. I told them, if they brought me insects and other things, they should have what they had stolen and had been forced to restore. They went away contented, after making many fine promises.

This evening I hear them holding high festival in their houses on the beach. The ball at Bioto had been postponed for another moon. Naimi asked me if I would go to it: I replied, "Yes," on which he expressed his regret at the loss of my canoe, and offered me the use of his own.

October 24th.—Fresh species of birds continue to arrive in the island, some are Papuan, others, which I see in New Guinea for the first time, are Australian.

I heard the note of the *Pitta Novæ Guineæ* all night, which I have not previously heard since I landed in this island.

To-day, Puro, the wife of Naimi, brought me a present of cooked bananas. She told me the occurrences of the last few months had much distressed her, and assured me I was at liberty to remain in the island at my pleasure, and that nothing should happen to disturb me again. I made her some small presents, and dismissed her with assurances that they had nothing to fear from me, so long as they did not molest me.

October 26th.—I was greatly surprised this morning by the arrival of the missionary steamer. Mr. MacFarlane had, however, been left at Somerset. I saw on board some of Mr. Macleay's

companions in his late expedition; they are naturalists on their way to Port Moresby to make collections. There is also a Mr. O. Stone, who purposes to cross the eastern peninsula—that is, the Owen Stanley range. The journey he proposes is a very interesting one, and he appears certain of success. I doubt the practicability of the undertaking, and I told him so: it is easier to ascend the highest peaks of the European Alps with an alpenstock, than to cross an ordinary hill in New Guinea.

I received news of the death of Mr. Applin, the Police Magistrate at Somerset. As he has acted exceedingly well as my agent, this is a blow to me.

*October 28th.*—The “Ellangowan” left to-day, but my friends promised to return here and convey me to Somerset. Mr. Applin’s death, and the arrival of these members of the dissolved Macleay expedition, who are going to Port Moresby, oblige me to change my plans.

The natives of Mou, who had retired to a distance on the arrival of the steamer, returned and told me they had gone to attend the funeral of a woman. Dr. James, one of the party on their way to Port Moresby, advised me to use quinine, for the dropsy which has set in in my legs; I have therefore doubled the dose.

*October 29th.*—John is very ill. Ten days ago he hurt the palm of one of his hands, in falling on a branch, he says, though I think the wound was made by the bullet of a revolver. The natives brought some women to-day, the first who had ventured to come since the outbreak

of hostilities, with the exception of Puro and the gentle Abia. They brought me some splendid insects, for which, as usual, I paid in beads.

Oa reappeared, after this long interval, with a fine snake (*Morelia variegata*). Parama, Naimi's aged father, Ocona, and many others of the natives came, all bringing something. Naimi told me that as my people had taken away the canoe which he had sold me, I cannot now possibly restore it to him, if I go away, and he thinks I ought to pay him for it over again. He told me my runaway servants are dead. I asked whether he had killed them? He then said it was not true that they were dead, but that they had gone to the village of Waima. He has, however, in his possession, a bag belonging to Abiuk, one of my men, but this, he said, had been given to him while I was at Naiabui. I believe my people are at Mou.

October 31st.—Towards five o'clock, two of those large canoes which gave us so much anxiety the third day after our arrival in this island, appeared. To-day they came from the east, and are steering to the west. Naimi says they come from a village called Aurama, a great distance off, and are bound for some distant lands in the west, called Kaema, in quest of sago, for which they exchange earthenware vessels of their own manufacture. He says the villages or lands above mentioned are very large—"diara pauama," or great villages—and he kept on saying, "Ten, ten!" and making signs that the inhabitants were very numerous. I could not restrain my laughter when he said, "Your coun-

try may be large, and there may be many men there, but Aurama is larger still, and at Aurama there are more men."

*November 1st.*—More than a hundred natives came to-day, from Mou, Bioto, Naiabui, and other villages; men and women came, but the latter predominated. A report has been spread that I am about to depart, and they have come to beg me to stay—so they say; but it is more likely they have come to get all they can out of me.

I said to one of the head men of Naiabui, who appeared more affected than the others at the prospect of my departure, "Why should I remain in your country when there are people who want to kill me, who steal my things, and refuse to work for me?" He and Naimi replied at once, "Stay here; you shall be our master; we will respect you and work for you. You shall live in our village, and we will defend you from your enemies." I answered, "No, I have no wife, and you are jealous of your women. I want to go and find my wives." They said, "Our daughters can become your wives." I asked how? They then said that for each wife I should have to give her father, first, a pig; secondly, ten skins of birds of paradise (*Paradisea Raggi-ana*), which they call Neci; thirdly, a Tanana, or necklace of dogs' teeth; fourthly, a Nobio, or necklace of crocodiles' teeth; fifthly, an Ojio, or bracelet, made of pieces of white shells strung together. According to European ideas, a wife at this rate is not very expensive; but, according even to Papuan notions, I am so poor that, if I am bound to live here always, I

shall probably end my days as a bachelor. Where should I find the Aiporo (pig), and how can I kill dogs and crocodiles sufficient to furnish necklaces for my fathers-in-law? No, I have made up my mind to be gone. They, however, insisted on my remaining. I saw a small spider to-day, which had spun its web under the edge of one of my boxes, and taken a butterfly, at least ten times its own size, prisoner. No sooner did the butterfly find itself caught than it began to flutter; I then watched the spider's proceedings. It issued from its hiding-place, and threw itself upon its victim, without, however, injuring it. Looking attentively, I saw that it attached a thread to the end of one wing, with which it ran away and made it fast to the box, so that the butterfly could not stir this wing; the spider then descended again, and repeated the performance at the other wing; it went backwards and forwards on similar errands eleven times, on each occasion diminishing its poor victim's power to flutter, until at last it could neither move nor offer any resistance. I thought now, probably, the time was come for the spider to begin to sup; but its work was not yet done. I saw it descend again and unhook one wing from the side to which it was fastened; the spider then climbed up, endeavouring to raise its prey, and, having secured the wing, it redescended and cut another thread, then, mounting again, repeated the performance. It ascended and descended twenty-one times, loosening all the lower threads, and making them fast higher up, until it had hoisted its prey to the mouth of its den. Having accomplished this,

it shut itself up in order to enjoy the fruits of its toil; but it seemed to me such an intelligent spider that I thought it worthy of being preserved in spirits of wine.

*November 2nd.*—To-day the natives made "Tatu" or rejoicing, and a magnificent dinner was served up—the table being loaded with fine fish, hogs' and kangaroos' flesh, and many different fruits of the soil. They invited me, but I had not sufficient confidence in them to leave my house unprotected. I say unprotected, for John has a very bad hand, and Arnold is confined to his bed with a severe attack of fever.

*November 5th.*—Twenty natives from Rapa came to-day, and were as insolent as usual; we were very near having a serious quarrel, and I was compelled to threaten them, revolver in hand. However, I obtained three hundred specimens of that beautiful lomotera of which I procured some a few days ago. They are now becoming common in the island, so that I can find some close to this house.

Naimi remained alone with me, and made me a communication unpleasantly like one of those prophecies which have turned out only too true. He told me the people of Aurama are to return in a few days, and he is afraid they are coming to attack the natives of Roro and Mou, and, of course, myself with the others. The women, he said, had already fled. I do not believe much of what he says, and I should not be surprised if the attack were to be made by the men of Rapa, Mou, and Roro, who throw the blame on the strangers beforehand, so as to take the responsi-

*Travellers' Tales.*

bility off their own shoulders in case of failure. I remember, too, that Naimi told me that he and his people were on good terms with Aurama.

*November 6th.*—At 2 p.m., Arnold came to announce that the steamer was in sight. I should in vain attempt to describe in writing the effect his words had on me, for they were as if he said, "Master, master, it is time to depart, to bid farewell to New Guinea." The words were cruel to me, for I love the country, and, notwithstanding my sufferings and annoyances, and the dangers I have encountered, my heart sinks at the prospect of being compelled to go away; I must, however, yield to the pressure of circumstances. Perhaps I shall return.

Dr. James has returned here with a companion, and they mean to set up a house and make collections.

*November 7th.*—The captain and engineer of the "Ellangowan," also the doctor and his companion, dined with me.

They told me of the discovery of the river Baxter, and of a bird of a huge species, which measures twenty-two feet between the tips of its wings. The engineer, however, diminished these dimensions, as stated by Mr. Stone, to sixteen feet. They compare the flapping of its wings to the noise made by a steam-engine, and assure me they had heard from the natives that it has often been seen to carry a dugong up into the air. Some of my companions were offended because I expressed my doubts of the credibility of this story. When I began to read Captain Lawson's book, I cast it aside as unworthy of



perusal; but now that real persons tell me of monsters which they have seen with their own eyes, although I do not believe them on that account, I shall read Captain Lawson's book afresh, and think of inventing a machine wherewith to measure the huge bird of the Baxter, and the skin of Captain Lawson's tiger.

*November 8th.*—I worked all day, preparing my baggage for embarkation. The natives of Mou and Bioto, after having tried in vain to keep me on the island, loaded themselves with my baggage, and took it on board; men and women both came in numbers, and worked hard for me. I must say, in justice to them, that I have not lost the smallest article, although they might easily have robbed me. When the house was emptied, they asked my leave to enter it, and take some things which I had discarded as useless.

The time for parting at last came; I paid all who had worked for me, and they departed quite satisfied, shaking my hand, and begging me to come back again. Naimi, Parama, Ocona, and the Queen, or Princess Puro, Naimi's wife, remained with me until the last moment, and accompanied me to the beach to bid me a last farewell. I shook their hands and took leave, but old Parama was not contented with a mere handshake; he asked leave to embrace me and kiss my hand, and I had not the heart to refuse the poor old man's request. Naimi and the others followed his example, and bathed my hands with their tears. I had no idea I was so soft-hearted; but I could not restrain the tears which started from my eyes; I did not believe myself

capable of such emotion, nor that they would have grieved so truly for my departure. I said to myself, "After all, they are good people, and have good hearts." They begged me to forget their faults, and asked me to forgive them, and return, and that soon. And ought I not to forgive them when I see them weeping at my departure, and kissing the hand which presented the gun at them, if not really to harm them, at least to make them believe I meant to do so? They have every reason for thinking this, for I fired at their canoes, at their women, and finally at themselves. And yet they weep to see me depart, and wish me to stay, or at least to return to them soon. They certainly are good and kind-hearted people. Perhaps they understand that, although strict, I have always been just towards them, that I have never outraged but always respected their feelings; while they, on the contrary, have injured me—and that the faults are all on their side.

I embraced them all once more, one by one, and then jumped into the skiff which was to take me on board. The last words I heard them utter were, "*Maria rau ! Maria rau !*" "Return, Maria ! return, Maria !"

## NOTES ON NAIABUI.

I THINK it expedient to give some more detailed information about the village of Naiabui, in order to present a better idea of the natives, and the life they lead. I select this village as the one in which I have longest resided, and where I have had an opportunity of thoroughly observing the normal mode of life, and not only the unusual state of things which marks the day of a stranger's arrival.

Naiabui is a village of three hundred inhabitants; there are more women than men, by about a third, and numerous children of both sexes. The village, as usual in this part of New Guinea, is built in two long rows of houses, on either side of a long wide roadway, shut in by a couple of houses at either end. The houses are separated from one another by an interval of six or seven yards, and are constructed of trunks of trees, bamboos, and the leaves of the nipa-tree. Their height above the ground varies from two to four yards, as a rule. Some of them are built on tall trees; the latter are, however, used only as pleasure-houses.

Dwellings belonging to the head men are called *mareas*; in these the men assemble for eating and discussion, and strangers are entertained. The young men live in the houses at the two extremi-

ties of the village; the women and children in the abodes of their husbands and fathers. The women are rarely allowed to enter a marea, and in many villages never; when they are in mourning, they are everywhere totally excluded from them.

In these mareas, with the exception of a few spears, shields, and drums, used by way of ornamentation, there is no furniture of any kind, unless a few small platforms along the walls, which are now and then used as beds, can be called furniture. The shape of the marea is almost always that of half a boat turned upside down.

All the possessions of the owners are kept in the other houses, which are rectangular in shape. Both houses and mareas invariably have verandahs in front of them, in which the natives assemble for conversation and eating. The food is prepared and brought there by the women, by whom it is cooked; the men, however, prepare the meat before it is handed over to the women to cook. For knives they use pieces of bamboo, which answer the purpose admirably. The married men sleep in the same houses in which the women live, but to which strangers are never admitted, as they sleep in the mareas.

The most arduous labour in the fields falls upon the men, while the women do the sowing. The latter, however, procure wood for burning, and carry home the crops from the fields; they are accustomed from their earliest childhood to carry loads, which, while resting on their backs and hips, are in reality carried from the head. Their loads are carried in a network bag, with a cord which passes over the head, a little above the

forehead. This cord leaves palpable marks on their heads, and I believe the impress of it would be found on their skulls. The women accompany the men on their hunting expeditions, carry their provisions, prepare their food, and bear home the hunting and fishing spoils. The men, however, always carry the heavy nets, which are used both for hunting and fishing.

When not engaged in either of these pursuits, they work daily in the fields, with the exception of the head men, who remain at home ; but all the rest, men, women, and children, go to work at sunrise, and do not return until the afternoon. The head men almost always employ their leisure in making nets. The food of this people consists chiefly of the produce of their hunting and fishing, of yams, bananas, taro, and cocoa-nuts. They also eat grasshoppers, coleoptera, and reptiles, shell-fish, and the larvæ of insects.

The women have not so much authority as in other villages, and wear fewer ornaments than the men. They wear their hair very short. They make bracelets and necklaces of shells, and earrings of tortoiseshell and pigs' tails. Their dress consists of a very short petticoat, made of grass stalks. The men wear a strip of yellow tupuna, which they bind on so tightly that one wonders how they can bear it at all, and I have no doubt the result of their so wearing it is to produce many diseases.

The children in this village run about naked up to the age of two years ; the girls are clothed sooner than the boys. The men are usually adorned with a number of earrings and

feathers, and paint their faces black, red, and yellow. They extract the red substance from a kind of chalk, which they also not only chew, but eat, in small quantities. They are very vain of their personal appearance, and spend much time at their toilet, which they perform twice a day, in the morning, and again a little before sunset. In the evening, after having adorned themselves, they pass through the village, strutting like peacocks, and visit the mareas. They often have their noses perforated, but do not wear in them the cylindrical ornaments made of shells, so much used in other parts of the country.

Their only weapons are spears, of which they carry three or more when on long expeditions. They are merry, vivacious, and talkative; men, women, and children, all mingle in their disputes. The infants are carried and kept in the usual network bags, to which they adapt themselves capitally, preserving in them the natural position which was theirs before they saw the light. When their mothers leave them at home, they are hung up in some part of the house, and those who are left in charge of them have only to swing the bag in order to quiet them and send them to sleep.

The men sleep in hammocks generally, but not always.

They light great fires at night under the houses and under their hammocks, to protect themselves against damp, cold, and mosquitoes. They are very sensitive to cold, and cover themselves at night with large pieces of tupuna.

They are very free in their actions and language,

even when women and children are present. I saw some boys, of quite tender age, performing some nasty tricks in public, without any reproof from their elders. The women, however, are much more reserved than the men.

They show grief for the dead, by painting themselves either all over, or only in parts, according to the degree of relationship with the deceased ; on these occasions they wear bracelets and anklets made of string. The chiefs only are allowed the honour of being interred within the village. I saw the graves of two of them in the centre of it, surrounded by a small palisade, behind which ferns were growing. All other persons are interred outside the village. When a death takes place, they mourn the deceased for one or two nights, but their affliction does not seem very deep.

I have not been able to discover any signs of religion among them ; and I cannot say whether they have any notion of the existence of a future state ; yet the mother who kept on repeating "*Rau, rau*" (return, return) over the grave of her son, seems to prove that they do not believe in total extinction—that is, in death in its absolute sense. Aiu, the old head man, alluding to one whom they were going to bury, said to me, "He has gone to rest."

They are quite unacquainted with metals, and use stone axes, bamboo knives, and instruments of hard wood to split wood. For fine work they use bits of stone or shells, with which they shave their heads as well as we could with our best razors. They use pointed shells to bore

holes in wood, and they have a kind of augur with a cord, very like one of primitive make which is still in use in Europe.

The only musical instruments they possess are the drum, a kind of bagpipes made of seven reeds, and a jews'-harp of bamboo. The health of the people appears good, but the boys are often afflicted with ulcers, which leave indelible scars. I saw only one case of dropsy, or very similar disease; the sufferer was a woman.

They have many decided tastes, and the men especially are passionately fond of dancing, which they do exceedingly well, accompanying the exercise with gesticulations, and music, and singing. They dress in their best for these dances.

They do a little in the way of commerce, bartering the products of their fields with those of other villages. I saw a place, on the top of a hill, cleared of grass and trees, which was exactly like one of our market-places. The people from distant villages assemble here at certain seasons for the purpose of barter. I may mention that I remarked they had begun to store a large quantity of cocoa-nuts, and although no one had been left in charge, and we were very thirsty, no one thought of taking any.

These islanders are polygamists, but the head men only have more than two or three wives. The young men are not permitted to marry until they have a house of their own, and articles necessary for the purchase of a wife—I say purchase, but this is not the proper word to employ; for as the woman is useful in the house from which she is taken, it seems reasonable that he who



takes her should give something by way of compensation to him who loses her.

Woman is the token of peace, and, therefore, in peaceable expeditions, the women march ahead of the men. The first or second time I went to Naiabui, one of the natives came up and said, "You are afraid of us." I asked him why he thought so, and he replied, "Because you have brought your women with you." To show him I was not afraid, the next time I returned to the village, I did not take the women. The same individual again said to me, "Why have you not brought your women? Have you come to do us harm?" "No," I replied, "it is only to show you that I am not afraid of you." It happened to be a rainy day, and, contrary to my usual custom of going about dressed like a Papuan, I had donned a military jacket of white cloth. He said, "It is true you have not brought your women, but still I see you are afraid of us, because you have come to-day with your shoulders and breast covered." "No," I returned, "I have no fear of you; your spears can do me no harm." Then, taking off my jacket, I continued, "Take your spear, and hurl it at my bare breast." I put my arms behind my back to present a better mark to him, as he thought, but in reality to grasp my revolver; and if he had tried to prove that his spear could injure me, I should probably have stopped the experiment with a bullet. But neither his hour nor mine was yet come; he was afraid to prove his spear against me, so spared me the necessity of proving my revolver.

In the evening, this man happened to be in my

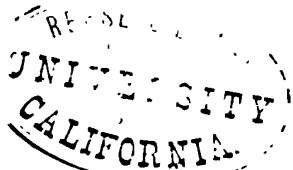
marea. I called to mind what he had said to me in the morning, and, going up to him, said, "He who can swallow fire has no dread of your spears." I then took a dish, and, pouring some essence of aniseed into it, I set fire to it with a match, and, approaching the burning liquid to my mouth, I blew on it quickly and drank it, the natives thinking I had really swallowed the flames. They fled in terror from the marea, not by the ladder, but by leaping headlong out of it with the utmost precipitation. It is remarkable that, by a trick, I was able to make them believe that the spirit which I had taken out of a bottle, which they themselves had just before been carrying, was nothing but plain water. In the midst of people who have never seen or heard of a white man, the most potent means of defence possessed by the latter is to act upon their superstitious fears. Courage avails much in most circumstances, though not in all; the natives dared not attack me face to face, nor perhaps even unawares; but when I was alone and asleep, surrounded by them, what availed courage? They could have planted a spear in my heart, or split my head with an axe or a club. How, then, can a man defend himself when he is asleep? The answer is simple enough. Make them believe you are something more than they; that you are not made of the same flesh and blood; make them as much afraid of you sleeping as waking; in a word, inspire them with a wholesome dread of approaching you at all. If there is an art my ignorance of which I regretted more than another in New Guinea, it was that of sleight of hand.

I did not leave Yule Island without real regret, for I had hoped, with time and increased facilities, owing to my having acquired proficiency in the language of the country, to penetrate into the interior and explore its lofty mountains. I therefore left it with regret, and a firm resolve to return, since I am persuaded I have it in my power to be useful to the natives, and that they, in their turn, will be willing to serve me. Had not unforeseen circumstances prevented me, I should have acceded to the request made me by the head men of Naiabui, and taken them with me to Sydney, where they might have seen, with their own eyes, what civilization means. I had explained to them the use of certain machines, and the manner in which we employ our horses and cattle, and they were desirous to see these things for themselves. My idea would have been to take them back to their own homes with horses and cattle, and some men to teach them how to employ them. In a word, I would have desired to institute an agricultural and industrial mission at Yule Island. My teachers should have been agriculturists and artisans, who, being dispersed through different villages, should have taught the natives to ameliorate their own condition. It would have been my wish to distribute among them the seeds of plants whose produce has a value in our eyes, and, at the time of harvest, to send a ship to purchase the fruits of their toil at a nominal price, so that they, being satisfied with the result of their first endeavours, should be induced to persevere. At the same time, their wants would be augmented, and the

second year would produce an excellent harvest and good interest for what had been laid out.

This is what I should like to have done; but I am not destined for such an undertaking, and I must lay aside the idea for many reasons—one of which is that my financial resources are inadequate to the task. My sympathy with, and esteem for, the inhabitants of this part of New Guinea make me hope that the day may not be far off when some rich man, or an association, possessed of sufficient capital, taking my programme as a starting-point, and modifying and improving it according to circumstances, will accomplish all I have indicated. I do not deny that religious missions may do good, but the good, be it moral or spiritual, is so long in coming, that I fear the natives will all be dead and gone before they are civilized and converted; for such as been the case in many other islands, in a condition more or less identical with that of the country I have just visited. The natives may be slow to understand the advantages of Christianity, but with the awakening of their intelligence, with their natural inclination for agricultural pursuits, and by means of commerce, they will not be tardy in appreciating the benefits of civilization. Moreover, I do not hesitate to say that an agricultural and industrial mission would pave the way for Christianity.

I arrived at Somerset on the 14th of November, 1875, and thus concluded my voyage to Yule Island.



## SUMMARY OF OBSERVATIONS AT YULE ISLAND AND HALL SOUND.

YULE Island, to the eyes of a traveller coming from the south-west, presents the appearance of a narrow tongue of land, about four miles in length, divided from the coast of New Guinea on the south-east by a channel about two miles and a half in width. On the east and north it is separated from the mainland by Hall Bay, which is from three to five miles wide

This island in long. E. of Greenwich from  $146^{\circ} 30'$  to  $146^{\circ} 33'$ , and lat. S.  $8^{\circ} 45'$  to  $8^{\circ} 49'$ , consists of two small chains of hills, which run along its entire length, and look as if at one time they had been a continuation of the chain which at the present day ends in Cape Suckling, at the east end of New Guinea. It is almost certain, in my opinion, that the same chain once stretched without interruption towards the north-west coast, joining with the chain that now crowns the coast at Cape Possession.

The maximum height of these hills, whether on the island or on the coast of the mainland, varies from 500 to 750 feet above the level of the sea. For the most part they are covered with beautiful vegetation, although here and there are tracts of long grass only. Looking towards the north on a clear day, the sharp peak of Mount Yule can be

distinguished at thirty miles inland. It towers proudly above the mountain chain, which, starting from it, stretches away east until it reaches the Stanley Range, the highest peak of which (called Mount Owen Stanley) can be seen on every clear day. The height of this mountain is said to be 13,200 feet above the level of the sea. Whether this be really its height or not, the fact remains that the Owen Stanley is distinctly visible at a distance of sixty-five miles from Yule Island. In order to avoid the coral banks at the entrance of Hall Bay, the ship must be kept in the middle of the south channel, and, if anchored to the north of the island, will be sheltered from every wind. I have no doubt that when New Guinea is colonized Hall Sound will become not only a harbour of the first class for trade, but also of strategical importance. The hills are admirably adapted as a site for fortifications to protect the island from attack, and if the hills on the mainland at the extreme point, near the entry of the south channel, were also fortified, the cross-fire from the batteries would render the passage of an enemy's ship quite impossible.

The soil of Yule Island is calcareous, with a volcanic base, and that it is of recent formation is proved by the coralline rock found on the highest peaks of the hills, while igneous rock is found on some parts of the shore.

Several springs of excellent fresh water yield, even during the months of the dry season, a sufficient supply for the natives. During the rains water is almost too abundant. In consequence of the dry nature of the soil, and the steep declivities,

which let the water run off, there are no marshes ; and to this may, in great measure, be attributed the fact that Yule Island is one of the healthiest spots in New Guinea. To any one accustomed to the heat of the tropics its climate would appear temperate. For about eight months of the year a moderately fresh wind blows from the south-east, while in the hot season the north wind brings refreshing coolness from the neighbourhood of the high mountains.

The medium temperature is about 85° Fahrenheit in the cooler season, and 90° in the hot season. During the night the minimum temperature may be reckoned at 74° Fahrenheit.

The rainy months are November, December, January, and February.

In March there are about ten days of rain, in April seven, in May and June one or two heavy showers.

At the end of July there are a few days of fine misty rain. In August and September some heavy showers, accompanied with lightning and thunder.

In October five days of rain, some heavy gales of wind, accompanied with heavy showers, lightning and thunder.

During the first fortnight of November there are six days of rain.

It must, however, be observed that, even on the rainy days there are some hours when the sky is clear.

I have no doubt that rain is more frequent in the neighbourhood of the high mountains, and that it is often accompanied by thunder and

lightning. On the mainland there is even more rain than on the island, on account of the vicinity of the mountains.

The island is under partial cultivation by the natives, and its soil is excellent. The uncultivated land is overgrown with high grass and with a dense vegetation.

A species of *myristica*, or muscatel-nut, is indigenous. There are some sago-trees, probably planted by the natives, and a few cocoa-nut-trees. A magnificent tree, which sheds its leaves at the season that represents winter in these climes, grows in the forest; it produces in great abundance what is called "silk cotton." A tree which resembles this, but is not the same, is found at Cape York.

I collected on this island about forty species of birds; many of them, however, appeared to be birds of passage only. Among them I may mention *Scytrops Novæ Ollandiæ*, which appeared for the first time on the island two months after our arrival; likewise *Eudynamis* and *Pitta Novæ Guineæ*, which made their appearance towards the end of October; and *Chalcophaps Margaritæ*.

The natives have not yet succeeded in exterminating the wild pig, and that animal does serious damage to plantations, unless they are protected by bamboo or wooden palisades.

I have seen several species of harmless serpents, the largest of which is *Liasis amethystinus*. One of these, taken near our house, measured 17 feet. These serpents feed on rats, which are plentiful, and on *pteropus* (flying foxes).

The months of September, October, and No-



vember are the richest in insects; and in the early part of November especially *lomaptera* may be gathered by thousands, while the bark of the cut-down trees swarms with *longicorn*s, *anthotripids*, and a hundred species of other families.

In a little stream of water there were two or three kinds of small fish.

The sea abounds in fish, and in the season turtles are not scarce; but it would seem they are never so plentiful as in the Torres Straits. Small insects, such as gnats and sand-flies, are much too abundant, and are a continual torment. There are day-gnats and night-gnats, of all colours and of all sizes.

The sand-flies are our next greatest enemies, and they penetrate through everything. Fortunately, however, they only make an appearance during the first days of a new moon. There are several varieties of the spider; one large one deserves special mention. It is of a most beautiful velvety purple, and lives in the earth. The largest specimens I saw measured three inches in length, the legs being under the body in the natural position.

Ants, although very numerous, are no great enemies to man, and I cannot complain of them much. I remember one very small black ant, of extraordinary voracity, but which does not get into the house. To give some idea of its powers of assimilation I may state that in four hours the body of a dog, as big as a hare, was reduced to a perfectly polished skeleton. Houses are infested by a large black ant, which is nocturnal in

its habits, does not appear in the daytime, and only attacks vegetable substances.

Termites are numerous : they build dwellings one or two feet high in the form of a truncated cone. I never saw an ant-hill higher than this ; none of them can be compared in shape or size to those of Cape York, Thursday Island, or the island of Tawan.

Wood-lice are common ; some of them measure eight inches in length. Their bite is somewhat venomous.

Scorpions also attain a great size, and they abound under stones, and about the bark of old tree-trunks.

If we cross from the island to the other side of the bay, landing almost at the point which forms the channel of entrance to the bay, we find ourselves at the foot of some low hills, which rise one above the other to a height of 700 feet, and then descend again to the plain. That part of the hills opposite to Yule Island, and close to the sea, looks as if a portion had been detached from the rest and flung into the sea. As Yule Island itself, opposite to these hills, which are washed by the waters of the bay, presents exactly the same appearance, one is led to conclude that the hills of the island, and those of the mainland were formerly comprised in a single chain, one part of which has been engulfed in the sea, and that thus Hall Bay and Yule Island have been formed. The hills on the mainland are moreover of madrepore, or coral formation. They are partly clothed with beautiful forest, and partly with long, thick, strong grass. Here, for the first time in

New Guinea, I met with the eucalyptus-tree. These trees alone are enough to give an Australian aspect to the country.

Pushing on from this point towards the north, we come to a low, flat shore, entirely covered with a forest of mangroves, which, at low tide, give forth pestiferous exhalations. Although a mangrove wood is beautiful to the eye, it may be affirmed that nothing within the tropics is more hateful, or more to be avoided. Its atmosphere during the hours of heat is most oppressive; and I may say that his instinct generally warns the traveller to keep away from it.

The roots of these trees are in great part exposed; they stretch out in every direction, knotting themselves together in the most wonderful way, and forming a regular labyrinth, in which the unaccustomed foot finds a fresh danger at every step. In addition, the soil is black and soft; one often sinks in it knee deep, and where it is harder it is not less dangerous, being slippery. Nauseating odours are emitted by the remains of animals, and by putrifying vegetation. Crabs, lizards, monitors, and snakes have their abode in these parts, from which man flies. Crocodiles frequently sun themselves on the banks. Birds are very few; the commonest is the kingfisher, who feeds on the shell-fish which abound in the mud and among the roots of the mangrove. A big bird belonging to this family, *Dacelo assimilis* (n. sp.), is also frequently found here. The harsh notes of *Dacelo gaudichaudi*, resound all day in these solitudes. I only noticed besides a few insectivorous birds,

who feed on honey also when the trees are in flower.

Passing beyond the melancholy region of mangroves, we find the hills again clothed with grass or with beautiful forests of eucalyptus. And here we begin to see pigeons, of all colours and of all sizes, from the tiny *Ptilopus coronulatus* to the comparatively large *Goura Albertisii* (n. sp.). Where the forest is densest the note of the *Paradisea Raggiana*, always pleasing to the ear of the bird-collector, can be detected; also the hoarse note and peculiar noise made by the *Buceros ruficollis* in flying.

In the high grass we met with the timid *Macropus Papuanus* (n. sp.), which surprised us by its leaps and its rapidity of movement; and in the forest, with the graceful *Dorcopsis luctuosus*, not less active nor less timid, but prettier than its congener, the said *Macropus Papuanus*.

This little marsupial (the *dorcopsis*) is exceedingly numerous, and always inhabits the forest, living on fruit only; while the *macropus*, which feeds only on grass, is scarcely ever found in the actual forest.

On the branch of a tall tree we may perhaps see a cuscus slowly creeping along, helping itself by its prehensile tail and by its hands; or we may see it furiously defending itself against the sharp talons of the *Harpiopsis Novæ Guineæ*, the handsomest and largest hawk of these forests—a curious bird, which has no affinity with any kind or species of the falcon family inhabiting the country, but, singular to say, seems to have a near kinship with the *Thrasætus harpia* of South

America. Should we happen to be present during such a struggle, we should hear the forest re-echo with the cries of the combatants. The *dorcopsis* is frequently the victim of this rapacious bird.

As on leaving the sea we advance in an easterly direction, we find that little by little the hills increase in height, and change in appearance and in nature.

We no longer find coral formation, but chalk, sandstone, and conglomerate. The forest assumes a more imposing appearance; the trees are more lofty, their foliage is thicker and greener than on the sea-side. The grass as well as the eucalyptus-trees disappear; this made us fancy for a moment that we were in Australia, and we hardly recognize that we are in New Guinea. The beautiful palm-trees and the lovely ferns repeat the truth to us, and the brilliant birds as well, as they fly from branch to branch over our heads. Small parrots, of rapid flight and shrill note, the *Eupetes nigrocrissus* (*n. sp.*), the *Pitta Novæ Guineæ*, the *Henicophaps albifrons*, and the *Chalcophaps*, flying from before our footsteps, remind us that we are in a land whereon nature, prodigal of beauty, has lavished the brightest gems of the feathered race.

Turning towards the north, we descend almost to the plain, where fertile valleys and broad flats extend to the foot of Mount Yule, and, stretching from the chain that begins with Mount Yule, reach out far to the east.

Here man, attracted by the beauty of the situation and the fertility of the soil, has made himself a dwelling-place.

The villages are numerous and populous ; and although in many respects the inhabitants must be deemed savages, their manners and customs are gentle, and they live in a state of comparative well-being and happiness, which might almost be called civilization. The physical fact which strikes us about them is, that they differ widely from the inhabitants of the north-west of this great island—at least from those hitherto known to me. Then we are struck by the individual differences we find existing among them. After a minute examination, we are obliged to conclude that, *supposing the existence of a true Papuan race*, here we are not in presence of true Papuans. We have here a mixed race, the result of the intermixture of two or more races who have met on this island in times more or less remote. We are not yet, however, and perhaps we may never be, sufficiently acquainted with the past history of this country to determine which one of the two races now inhabiting it, separately or mixed—I might even say amalgamated—is the aboriginal, or at least the most ancient, race of the island. Nor is it possible to decide exactly whether the so-called Papuans are really the most ancient inhabitants of New Guinea.

At the present day it seems to be agreed that by Papuans is meant a race with black, or nearly black skin, and woolly hair, among which those individuals, or those populations, having smooth hair and light-coloured skin, are not true Papuans. It may be that the Papuans are the inhabitants of the north-west—excepting, of course, the Malay population, who are beginning

to colonize some part of the coast, and the inhabitants of Salomone Island, of New Britain, of New Caledonia, and of the Fiji Islands. I must observe, however, that not one of the Papuans whom I have seen in the north-west of New Guinea, resembles a Fiji islander, or a native of New Caledonia, or of New Britain.

I have seen natives of the Fiji Islands at Kandavu, and many in Torres Straits, employed in the mother-of-pearl fisheries; I have seen natives of New Britain island, and have had four in my own service at Yule Island; I have seen many from New Caledonia, either in Torres Straits or at Sydney; but among them all I never saw one who could be mistaken for an inhabitant of the north-west. If, therefore, the men of New Britain, of the Fijis, and of New Caledonia, are types of the Papuan race, I have no hesitation in saying that not a single Papuan exists in those parts of New Guinea which I have visited.

Professor Paolo Mantegazza, in his "Anthropological and Ethnographical Studies on New Guinea" (Florence, 1877), adds, besides the above-mentioned peoples, the inhabitants of New Hebrides to the number of Papuans. Now, at Yule Island I had sixteen persons in my service who belonged to New Hebrides; but they certainly were not of the Papuan family. They were, on the contrary, quite different from all those so-called Papuans, having, instead of black skin or woolly hair, a lighter skin than the Malay, while their hair was hardly even curly.

I shall not now mention other characteristics, by which they are not only distinguished from

the Papuans (so-called), but are brought nearer to the people we are now considering, in proportion as they are farther from the so-called Papuan type. Nevertheless, it is right to admit that even in New Hebrides there are two distinct races.

In the villages we are now visiting we also find two varieties, often very distinct, with characteristics almost peculiar to themselves. A type also prevails in which the mixture of these two varieties is apparent, and seems destined to survive the two types—representing the two varieties which are now becoming amalgamated. The two varieties to which I allude may be defined thus—the yellow, and the black.

The term, yellow, does not exactly express the first, nor does black, the second, and those adjectives must be used comparatively only. The characteristics of the yellow variety are as follows: hair curling or smooth—neither crisp nor woolly, black and shining, often almost of a chestnut hue; forehead large and flat; temples little, if at all, depressed; eye-orbits scarcely, if at all, prominent; cheek bones rather high; round chin and round face; large brown eyes, with eyeballs of a bluish white; the nose often aquiline, never flattened, and generally small; lips moderately full; and brachicephalous, and round skull. These people are not prognathous. In colour they vary from brown to very light brownish yellow. In stature they are not generally inferior to the black race, and their forms are fuller and rounder.

The black variety is distinguished by a narrow and retreating forehead, compressed temples, strongly-marked orbital arches, prominent cheek



bones, aquiline nose, pointed and narrow chin, long face, decidedly prognathous, an oblong skull. The eyes are small, either black or brown, the eyeball bloodshot, or yellowish, and the men are tall and generally thin. The preponderating type exhibits every gradation that can result from the mingling of the two principal varieties.

We may therefore conclude that the present inhabitants of Hall Bay are a mixture of two races, one dark-skinned and crisp-haired, the other with lighter skin and smooth hair; and this is all that can be said from our present knowledge.

How these two races or varieties came in contact I do not attempt to explain. Neither, in all probability, is native to New Guinea, but other lands were the cradle of both. I remember one man, whom I saw in slavery at Epa, and who differed very much in physical characteristics from all the people about him, told me that he belonged to an inland tribe; and he recollected, in an indistinct way, some of the Alfuros, so-called, whom I saw on my passage to Ramoi. We may believe, therefore, that a purer and more homogeneous race exists in the interior of the mountains. But what this race is we are unable to say. The man whom I saw at Epa was of mature age, well made, and finely proportioned, but of short stature, not more than four feet nine inches. There was a great deal of woolly hair on his body, the hair of his head was also woolly; his skin was exceedingly dark, but he was scarcely, if at all, prognathous. Nevertheless, he cannot be said to represent that race of Papuans of which the inhabitants of Salmon Island, New Britain, and

New Caledonia are a type. Nor was he a truer representative of the negro than of this race.

I am unacquainted with the true type of the Nigritos; therefore I cannot say whether or not they correspond with this description.

Laying aside, for the present, the physical characteristics of the inhabitants of Hall Sound, if we consider their moral character and their manner of living we shall probably be surprised to find that they have already acquired a certain degree of civilization, which must prevent their being called savages, strictly speaking, and which enables them to lead an industrious, quiet, and probably happy life. I was not able to discover among them any sign of religion, nor to ascertain whether they possess any idols. They are superstitious, and it would appear that they resort to incantations and signs under certain circumstances.

For instance, the drawing of a horoscope by means of a pebble dangling from a thread held between the thumb and first finger, is of everyday occurrence. Making invocations and conjurations by words and signs is also a common practice among these people. Does this imply a belief in spirits? I cannot tell.

Have they any kind of belief in the immortality of the soul? To this I cannot reply with certainty; but what is the meaning of the tears and lamentations of that poor mother who for three days and three nights lies stretched on the grave of her little son, calling him by his name, and repeating in a voice broken by sobs, "Oh, come back, beloved one—come back to thy mother?"

Why that reverence for their dead, which causes them to bury them in the midst of the village and beneath the very houses, and which adorns their graves with ferns and flowers? Here, however, we do not find, as in the Arfak mountains, either food or weapons placed on the grave, to imply that the spirit of the dead man can still make use of them; and we may conclude that the tears, the lamentations, and the flowers, are but tokens of respect and love offered to the memory of the beloved,

Have they sacred places? I was often prevented from going into the forest, or into the fields, by my guide. He would call out, "Buco, buco!" signifying that it was forbidden me to go farther. A stone slab placed at the end of a plantation is sufficient to forbid entrance. "Buco" is equivalent to "tabu." At Epa a man in mourning may not enter the Marea, or house of reception; to him it is "bucu." At Mou, women may not enter the Marea; it is "bucu" to them.

The fertile and well cultivated soil produces great quantities of fruit. Game and fish are abundant in the forest, the rivers, and the sea; while alternate hunting and fishing allows of variety in their food, to which is greatly due the good health enjoyed by the people, and their exemption from many of the diseases common among men in a half-savage state under less favourable conditions.

They practise, but do not abuse polygamy. The chiefs only have as many as five wives. Generally, however, they have but two.

Wives are obtained by payment to the father of

the maiden of a sum of money in compensation for the loss he sustains in giving up his daughter. The women, although obliged to work hard, are, perhaps on account of their usefulness, held in respect, and have influence in their own families. In some villages, they exercise much authority and supremacy.

In war they are respected even by the enemy. From what I have observed, I am inclined to believe that a community partly composed of women would never be attacked by another tribe. Women, in short, act like a banner of peace. They are the ambassadors, who are sent to ask leave to enter or to pass through a village, and they are the first to give welcome to a stranger.

The most perfect harmony seems to reign in families, and rare indeed are cases of quarrel among members of one household.

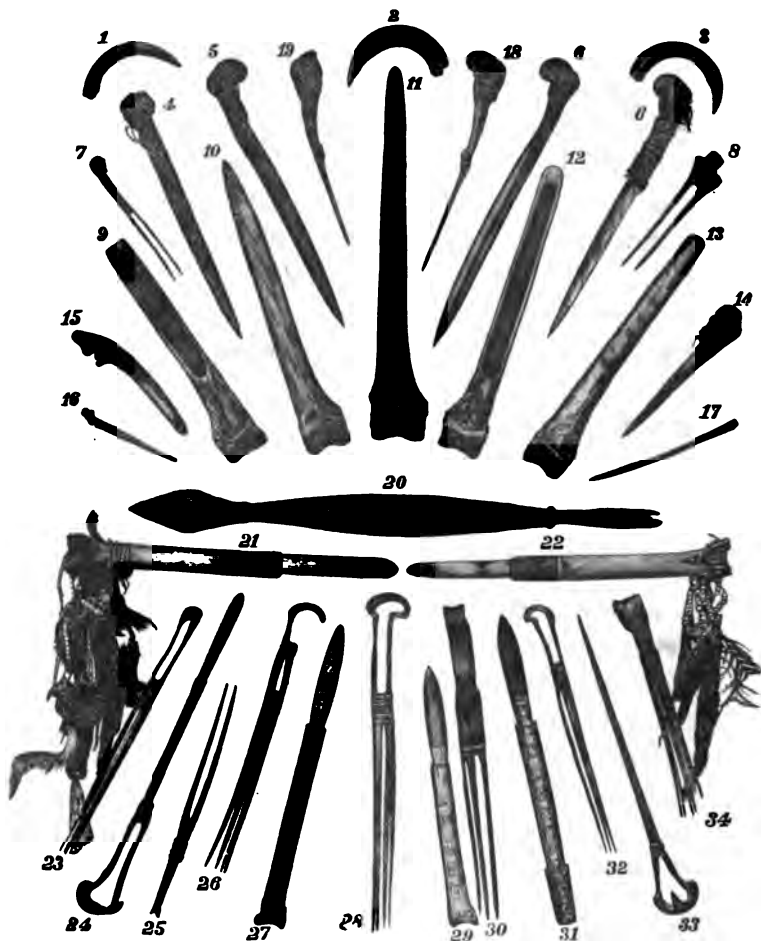
They live in communities, sometimes of more than a thousand inhabitants, in well-built villages, worthy to be called small towns, both for their order and cleanliness. They are under the rule of the chiefs or landowners.

These chiefs have little authority; but they enjoy certain privileges, the first of which is polygamy. The supremacy of the chief weighs lightly on his subjects, whose duties are comprised in field-work, hunting, and fishing.

The chief is looked upon as father of the family. He is called Pacao, and his servant or subject is called Irine. From all I could learn, slavery does not exist, and the sale of human beings is unknown.

Skilful alike in husbandry and in hunting or fishing, they easily procure the necessaries of life; and the remainder of their time they either pass

Fly River.



Hall Sound.

in idleness, or in dancing and feasting, in visits among friendly tribes, and in receiving them in their own villages. They fish with nets of various

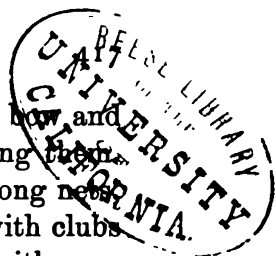
### *Yule Island.*

kinds, and they prefer the spear to the bow and arrow, which is becoming obsolete among them. For hunting they make use of very strong nets in which they catch the game, killing it with clubs and spears. They are unacquainted with any metal, and their weapons and utensils are made of stone and bone. A bivalve shell, the teeth of the kangaroo, and the tusks of the wild boar, are, in the hands of these people, implements of the greatest utility. For personal adornment they use berries, flowers, bone, shells, and feathers, especially bright-coloured ones. The *Paradisea Raggiana* is on this account held in great estimation. Necklaces of dogs' and crocodiles' teeth are most highly valued, and, together with the *Paradisea Raggiana*, serve for the purchase of wives.

They also ornament articles of use with fine carving, and the forks, made from the leg bone of the cassowary, with which they eat fish, are most admirably carved. Even the little sticks for conveying the lime they are in the habit of chewing to the mouth are often finely carved, and ornamented with feathers and the heads and legs of birds, and with teeth, shells, &c., &c., as may be seen by the accompanying print.

They wear nose ornaments of cylindrical shells, hanging from the lobe of the ear.

The men wear very narrow girdles round the body, in such a way as to seem to our eyes like instruments of torture. The women wear garments of grass cloth, skilfully and tastefully made; on gala days they are of various hues, but for ordinary working days they are simpler both in make and colour.



In general, the women are less given to personal adornment than the men, and it must be said that the men are vainer than the women.

The early hours of the morning are devoted to cleaning the houses and the road, which the women keep clean, each in front of her own door. The young men attend to the care of their own persons, adorning themselves with plumes and feathers, and painting their faces with different colours. It is not uncommon to see the young of both sexes parading the village streets in the afternoon, laden with every ornament they possess, and paying visits. Their natural disposition is gentle and placid. They like to spend their time in talking and games, in which men and women take an equal share. Playful and free of speech, they nevertheless do not transgress the bounds of modesty, either in word or deed. Women and children are included in every conversation, and often take part in the public discussions, which are usually held in the evening. Women are always respected, and in some villages especially they enjoy a certain supremacy, although the government of the house belongs to the husband. Labour may be said to be fairly divided between the two sexes, and they are accustomed to work from their earliest childhood. The more fatiguing field-work, or surrounding the fields with palisades for protection against animals hurtful to the plantations, falls to the share of the men. Sowing, gathering, providing daily what is necessary for the family, is the business of the women. The men make the nets for hunting and fishing, and build the canoes and

houses. The women cook, but the men prepare the flesh-meat for them.

Notwithstanding the abundance of game, fish, and fruit, they eat many things horrifying to an European. To say nothing of the full-grown coleoptera which they eat after removing their elitra, and slightly broiling them on hot ashes, I need only mention that they eat the larvæ which they procure from rotten old trees.

They know little or nothing of medicine, and while I lived among them I only once saw, at Epa, anything appertaining to that science. What I saw consisted in the mastication of the bark of a plant, and the juice thus obtained was applied to the chest of the patient, who was also subjected to hand-friction. At Yule Island, at a later period, I saw a woman curing the sores of her son by cauterizing them with a hot stone.

The people may, however, be acquainted with the medicinal virtues of different plants, and have some faith in medicine, for they often asked me for remedies for their ailments; but they were afraid of taking internal remedies, and would only accept those which were for external use.

Tattooing is practised among them. The women have nearly their whole body covered with marks. Children are seldom tattooed, and slaves never.

I can scarcely call the men tattooed, for although they frequently have marks on the chest or shoulders, they occur very rarely on the face. Tribes and families are recognized by tattoo-marks. They carry on a small trade by means of barter, and exchange the produce of hunting and fishing for the products of the earth.



They do not manufacture, but they use earthenware vessels for cooking. They obtain these vessels from people trading in them, who live, so far as I could learn, on the east of Yule Island, in a village called Aurama; and every year they make a voyage along the coast towards the west, where they ascend a river, which takes them to a country called Kaema, four days' journey to the west of Yule Island. The object of the journey would seem to be the exchange of earthenware for sago, which does not exist in their own country.

These people make the voyage in large canoes, capable of containing a hundred persons, and I had an opportunity of seeing four of these large boats, with peculiar sails, during the first few days after my arrival in the island.

They obtain provisions during the voyage by touching at the villages on the coast, and giving their earthenware in exchange. From what I have related of them, the reader will infer that they are a capable and intelligent race, leading a quietly happy life, and not prepared for the fatal word which will set them on the way of our civilization, and change their whole manner of life.

The material for civilization is in them; but will the change make them better? Will they be the happier for it? This is a difficult problem; and one which cannot be solved until the experiment has been made.

For my part, however, I do not doubt that these, more readily than any other savages whom I know, would answer to the call of a civilized

nation which, stretching out a fraternal hand, would lead them towards our civilization !

I am also convinced that, if well treated and guided, this people would repay any sacrifices made for them with interest. To ensure success, however, they should be treated as friends, not as slaves ; they should be cherished, not destroyed.

# CATALOGUE OF BIRDS COLLECTED IN NEW GUINEA (N.W.) IN THE YEAR 1872.

*The species marked \* were new.*

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>SP.<br/>1. <i>Cuncuma leucogaster</i> (Gm.).<br/>2. <i>Baza reinwardtii</i> (Müll. &amp; Schleg.).<br/>3. <i>Harpyopsis novæ guineæ</i> (Salvad.).*<br/>4. <i>Uropspizias etorques</i> (Salvad.).*<br/>5. <i>Uropspizias epilothorax</i> (Salvad.).*<br/>6. <i>Leucospizias leucosomus</i> (Sharpe).<br/>7. <i>Pandion haliaetus</i> (Linn.).<br/>8. <i>Ninox dimorpha</i> (Salvad.).*<br/>9. <i>Microglossus aterrimus</i> (Gm.).<br/>10. <i>Tanygnathus megalorhynchus</i> (Bodd.).<br/>11. <i>Aprosmictus dorsalis</i> (Q. &amp; G.).<br/>12. <i>Cyclopsittacus occidentalis</i> (Salvad.).*<br/>13. <i>Cyclopsittacus diopthalmus</i> (H. &amp; J.).<br/>14. <i>Geoffroyus pucherani</i> (Bp.).<br/>15. <i>Geoffroyus simplex</i> (Meyer).<br/>16. <i>Eclectus polychlorus</i> (Scop.).<br/>17. <i>Dasyptilus pesqueti</i> (Less.).<br/>18. <i>Lorius lory</i> (Linn.).<br/>19. <i>Eos fuscata</i> (Blyth).<br/>20. <i>Chalcopsittacus ater</i> (Scop.).<br/>21. <i>Trichoglossus cyanogrammus</i> (Wagl.).<br/>22. <i>Neopsittacus musschenbroekii</i> (Rosenb.).<br/>23. <i>Coriphilus placens</i> (Temm.).<br/>24. <i>Charmosynopsis pulchella</i> (G. R. Gr.).<br/>25. <i>Charmosyna papuensis</i> (Gm.).</p> | <p>SP.<br/>26. <i>Cuculus canoroides</i> (S. Müll.).<br/>27. <i>Lamprococcyx meyerii</i> (Salvad.).*<br/>28. <i>Nesocentor menebeki</i> (Gaim.).<br/>29. <i>Rhytidoceros ruficollis</i> (Vieill.).<br/>30. <i>Eurystomus pacificus</i> (Lath.).<br/>31. <i>Eurystomus crassirostris</i> (Sclat.).<br/>32. <i>Merops ornatus</i> (Lath.).<br/>33. <i>Alcyon lessonii</i> (Cass.).<br/>34. <i>Ceyx solitaria</i> (Temm.).<br/>35. <i>Sauropatis albicilla</i> (Cuv.).<br/>36. <i>Sauropatis chloris</i> (Bodd.).<br/>37. <i>Sauropatis sancta</i> (Vig. &amp; Horsf.).<br/>38. <i>Cyanalcyon nigrocyanea</i> (Wall.).<br/>39. <i>Tanysiptera galatea</i> (G. R. Gr.).<br/>40. <i>Tanysiptera nympa</i> (G. R. Gr.).<br/>41. <i>Syma torotoro</i> (Less.).<br/>42. <i>Suaromarpis gaudichaudi</i> (Q. &amp; G.).<br/>43. <i>Melidora macrorrhina</i> (Less.).<br/>44. <i>Pitta novæ-guinææ</i> (Müll. &amp; Schleg.).<br/>45. <i>Pitta mackloti</i> (Temm.).<br/>46. <i>Podargus papuensis</i> (Q. &amp; G.).<br/>47. <i>Ægotheles albertisii</i> (Sclat.).<br/>48. <i>Macropteryx mystacea</i> (Less.).<br/>49. <i>Hirundo javanica</i> (Sparrm.).</p> |
|--|--|

- 8P.  
50. *Hylochelidon nigricaus* (Vieill.).  
51. *Peltops blainvillei* (Garn.).  
52. *Monarcha chalybeocephalus* (Garn.).  
53. *Monarcha rubiensis* (Meyer).  
54. *Monarcha frater* (Sclat.).  
55. *Monarcha guttulates* (Garn.).  
56. *Monarcha dichrous* (G. R. Gr.).  
57. *Arses telescopthalma* (Garn.).  
58. *Monachella saxicolina* (Salvad.).\*  
59. *Leucophantes brachyurus*, (Sclat.).\*  
60. *Microeca flavo-virescens* (G. R. Gr.).  
61. *Rhipidura maculipectus* (G. R. Gr.).  
62. *Rhipidura leucothorax* (Salvad.).\*  
63. *Rhipidura setosa* (Q. & G.).  
64. *Rhipidura albo-limbata* (Salvad.).\*  
65. *Rhipidura mülleri* (Meyer).  
66. *Machærorhynchus nigripectus* (Schleg.).  
67. *Graucalus papuensis* (Gm.).  
68. *Graucalus strenuus* (Schleg.).  
69. *Graucalus boyeri* (G. R. Gr.).  
70. *Edolisoma melas* (S. Müll.).  
71. *Campocheara sloetii* (Schleg.).  
72. *Artamus leucogaster* (Valenc.).  
73. *Dicrurus carbonarius* (Bp.).  
74. *Cracticus cassicus* (Bodd.).  
75. *Cracticus quoyi* (Less.).  
76. *Rectes dichroa* (Bp.).  
77. *Rectes cirrhocephala* (Less.).  
78. *Rectes ferruginea* (Bp.).  
79. *Rectes nigrescens* (Schleg.).  
80. *Colluricincla megarrhyncha* (Q. & G.).  
81. *Pachycephala rufinucha* (Sclat.).\*  
82. *Pachycephala schlegelii* (Rosenb.).  
83. *Pachycephala soror* (Sclat.).\*  
84. *Pachycephala hattamensis* (Meyer).

- 8P.  
85. *Pachycephala hyperythra* (Salvad.).\*  
86. *Pachycephala bimaculata* (Salvad.).\*  
87. *Pachycephala cyana* (Salvad.).\*  
88. *Climacteris placens* (Sclat.).\*  
89. *Hermotimia aspasia* (Less.).  
90. *Cyrtostomus frenatus* (S. Müll.).  
91. *Melanocharis nigra* (Less.).  
92. *Melanocharis longicauda* (Salvad.).\*  
93. *Euthyrhynchus* sp.  
94. *Ptilotis analoga* (Rchb.).  
95. *Ptilotis melanophrys* (Sclat.).\*  
96. *Ptilotis cinerea* (Sclat.).\*  
97. *Melipotes gymnotus* (Sclat.).\*  
98. *Xanthotis chrysotis* (Less.).  
99. *Melidectes torquatus* (Sclat.).\*  
100. *Tropidorhynchus novæ guineæ* (S. Müll.).  
101. *Pomatorhinus isidorii* (Less.).  
102. ? *Brachypteryx murina* (Temm.).  
103. *Melampitta lugubris* (Schleg.).  
104. *Eupetes cerulescens* (Temm.).  
105. *Eupetes leucostictus* (Sclat.).\*  
106. *Gerygone* (?) *arfakiana* (Salvad.).\*  
107. *Todopsis cyanocephala* (Q. & G.).  
108. *Malurus albo-capulatus* (Meyer).  
109. *Munia tristissima* (Wall.).  
110. *Calornis metallica* (Temm.).  
111. *Calornis mysolensis* (G. R. Gr.).  
112. *Calornis cantoroides* (G. R. Gr.).  
113. *Melanopyrrhus anais* (Less.).  
114. *Mino dumontii* (Less.).  
115. *Mimeta striata* (Q. & G.).  
116. *Amblyornis inornata* (Rosenb.).  
117. *Eluroedus arfakianus* (Meyer).  
118. *Eluroedus buccoides* (Temm.).

- SP.  
 119. *Xanthomelus aureus* (Linn.).  
 120. *Ciccinnurus regius* (Linn.).  
 121. *Diphyllodes magnifica* (Penn.).  
 122. *Paradisea minor* (Shaw).  
 123. *Paradisea raggiana* (Sclat.)\*  
 124. *Seleucides ignota* (Forster).  
 125. *Craspedophora magnifica* (Vieill.).  
 126. *Drepanornis albertisii* (Sclat.)\*  
 127. *Epimachus speciosus* (Bodd.).  
 128. *Lophorhina superba* (Penn.).  
 129. *Parotia sexpennis* (Bodd.).  
 130. *Manucodia chalybeata* (Penn.).  
 131. *Manucodia atra* (Less.).  
 132. *Manucodia keraudrenii* (Less. & Garn.).  
 133. *Corvus orru* (Müll.).  
 134. *Gymnocorvus senex* (Less.).  
 135. *Ptilopus prasinorrhous* (G. R. Gr.).  
 136. *Ptilopus bellus* (Sclat.)\*  
 137. *Ptilopus perlatus* (Temm.).  
 138. *Ptilopus ornatus* (Rosenb.).  
 139. *Ptilopus pulchellus* (Temm.).  
 140. *Ptilopus superbus* (Temm.).  
 141. *Megaloprepia puella* (Less.).  
 142. *Carpophaga myristicivora* (Scop.).  
 143. *Carpophaga zoeae* (Less.).  
 144. *Carpophaga rufiventris* (Salvad.)\*  
 145. *Carpophaga chalconota* (Salvad.)\*  
 146. *Carpophaga pinon* (Q. & G.).  
 147. *Gymnophaps albertisii* (Salvad.)\*  
 148. *Reinwardtoena reinwardtii* (Temm.).  
 149. *Macropygia doreya* (Bp.).
- SP.  
 150. *Phlogoenas rufigula* (Pucher. & Jacq.).  
 151. *Chalcophaps stephani* (Jacq. & Pucher.).  
 152. *Henicophaps albifrons* (G. R. Gr.).  
 153. *Eutrygon terrestris* (G. R. Gr.).  
 154. *Otidiphaps nobilis* (Gould.).  
 155. *Goura coronata* (Linn.).  
 156. *Caloenas nicobarica* (Linn.).  
 157. *Talegallus cuvierii* (Less.).  
 158. *Talegallus fuscirostris* (Salvad.)\*  
 159. *Megapodius freycineti* (Q. & G.).  
 160. *Megapodius duperreyi* (Less. & Garn.).  
 161. *Megapodius affinis* (Meyer) ?  
 162. *Charadrius fulvus* (Gm.).  
 163. *Squatarola helvetica* (Linn.).  
 164. *Numenius uropygialis* (Gould.).  
 165. *Totanus incanus* (Gm.).  
 166. *Tringoides hypoleuca* (Linn.).  
 167. *Erythra ruficrissa* (Gould.).  
 168. *Ardea sumatrana* (Raffl.).  
 169. *Demiegretta sacra* (Gm.).  
 170. *Herodias nigripes* (Temm.).  
 171. *Butorides flavicollis* (Lath.).  
 172. *Nycticorax caledonicus* (Gm.).  
 173. *Ibis strictipennis* (Gould.).  
 174. *Tadorna radjah* (Garn.).  
 175. *Microcarbo sulcirostris* (Brandt.).  
 176. *Sula fiber* (Linn.).  
 177. *Sterna cristata* (Stephens).  
 178. *Hydrochelidon hybrida* (Pall.).  
 179. *Anous stolidus* (Linn.).  
 180. *Casuarus sp.*

END OF VOL. I.



**RETURN  
TO →**

MAIN CIRCULATION

ALL BOOKS ARE SUBJECT TO RECALL  
RENEW BOOKS BY CALLING **642-3405**

**DUE AS STAMPED BELOW**

MAY 06 1997

RECEIVED

MAY 29 1996

CIRCULATION DEPT.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, BERKELEY  
BERKELEY, CA 94720

FORM NO. DD6

YC 59053

U.C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C020931717

20132

D7L740

A3

v.1

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY





